

12270 and 119

AN
AMERICAN SELECTION
OF

Lessons in Reading and Speaking.

CALCULATED

To improve the MINDS and refine the TASTE
of YOUTH.

AND ALSO

To instruct them in the GEOGRAPHY, HISTORY, and
POLITICKS of the UNITED STATES.

To which is prefixed,

RULES in ELOCUTION, and DIRECTIONS for expressing
the principal PASSIONS of the Mind.

BEING

The THIRD PART of a Grammatical Institute
of the English Language.

By NOAH WEBSTER, Jun'r. ESQUIRE.

THE EIGHTH CONNECTICUT EDITION

*Begin with the Infant in his Cradle : Let the first word he
lisps, be* WASHINGTON, *MIRABEAU.*

HARTFORD:
PRINTED AND SOLD BY HUDSON AND GOODWIN.
[With the Privilege of COPY-RIGHT.]
M,DCC,XCIII.

P R E F A C E.

THE design of this THIRD PART of the Grammatical Institute of the English Language, is to furnish schools with a variety of exercises for reading and Speaking. Colleges and Academies are already supplied with many excellent collections for this purpose; among which, the *Art of Speaking*, *Enfield's Speaker*, *Enfield's Exercises*, the *Preceptor*, the *Young Gentleman and Lady's Monitor*, and *Scott's Lessons*, are used with great reputation. But none of these, however judicious the selection, is calculated particularly for American schools. The essays respect distant nations or ages: or contain general ideas of morality. In America, it will be useful to furnish schools with additional essays, containing the history, geography, and transactions of the United States. Information on these subjects is necessary for youth, both in forming their habits and improving their minds. A love of our country, and an acquaintance with its true state, are indispensable—they should be acquired in early life.

In the following work, I have endeavoured to make such a collection of essays as should form the morals as well as improve the knowledge of youth.

In the choice of pieces, I have been attentive to the political interest of America. I consider it as a capital fault in all our schools, that the books generally used contain subjects wholly uninteresting to our youth; while the writings that marked the revolution, which are not inferior in any respect to the orations of Cicero and Demosthenes, and which are calculated to impress interesting truths upon young minds, lie neglected and forgotten. Several of those masterly addresses of Congress, written at the commencement of the late revolution contain such noble sentiments of liberty and patriotism, that I cannot help wishing to transfuse them into the breasts of the rising generation.

This part completes the system I had proposed to publish for the use of schools. To refine and establish our language, to facilitate the acquisition of grammatical knowledge, and diffuse the principles of virtue, and patriotism, is the task I have labored to perform; and whether the success should equal my wishes or not, I shall still have the satisfaction of reflecting that I have made a laudable effort to advance the happiness of my country.





RULES for READING and SPEAKING.

R U L E I.

Let your articulation be clear and distinct.

A GOOD articulation consists in giving every letter and syllable its proper pronounciation of sound.

Let each syllable and the letters which compose it, be pronounced with a clear voice, without whining, drawling, lisping, stammering, mumbling in the throat, or speaking through the nose. Avoid equally a dull, drawling habit, and too much rapidity of pronounciation; for each of these faults destroys a distinct articulation.

R U L E II.

Observe the stops, and mark the proper pauses, but make no pause where the sense requires none.

The characters we use as stops are extremely arbitrary and do not always mark a suspension of the voice. On the contrary, they are often employed to separate the several members of a period, and show the grammatical construction. Nor when they are designed to make pauses, do they always determine the length of those pauses; for this depends much on the sense and nature of the subject. A semicolon, for example, requires a longer pause in a grave discourse, than in a lively and spirited declamation. However, as children are incapable of nice distinctions, it may be best to adopt at first some general rule with respect to the pauses* and teach them to pay the same attention to these characters as they do to the words. They should be cautioned likewise against pausing in the midst of a member of a sentence, where the sense requires the words to be closely connected in pronounciation.

R U L E III.

Pay the strictest attention to accent, emphasis and cadence.

Let the accented syllables be pronounced with a proper

* See the first part of the Institute, where the proportion of the comma, semicolon, colon and period, is fixed at one, two, four, six.

stress of voice ; the unaccented with little stress of voice, but distinctly.

The important words of a sentence, which I call naturally emphatical, have a claim to a considerable force of voice ; but particles, such as, *of, to, as, and, &c.* require no force of utterance, unless they happen to be emphatical, which is rarely the case. No person can read or speak well, unless he understands what he reads : and the sense will always determine what words are emphatical. It is a matter of the highest consequence, therefore, that a speaker should clearly comprehend the meaning of what he delivers, that he may know where to lay the emphasis. This may be illustrated by a single example. This short question, *Will you ride to town to day*, is capable of four different meanings, and consequently of four different answers, according to the placing of the emphasis. If the emphasis is laid upon *you*, the question is whether *you* will ride to town or *another person*. If the emphasis is laid on *ride*, the question is, whether you will *ride* or go on *foot*. If the emphasis is laid on *town*, the question is, whether you will ride to *town* or to *another place*. If the emphasis is laid on *to day*, the question is, whether you will ride to *day* or some *other day*. Thus the whole meaning of a phrase often depends on the emphasis ; and it is absolutely necessary that it should be laid on the proper words.

Cadence is a falling of the voice in pronouncing the closing syllable of a period*. This ought not to be uniform ; but different at the close of different sentences.

But in interrogative sentences, the sense often requires the closing word or syllable to be pronounced with an elevated voice. This, however, is only when the last word is emphatical ; as in this question, “ Betrayest thou the son of man with a *kiss* ?” Here the subject of enquiry is, whether the common token of love and benevolence is prostituted to

* We may observe that good speakers always pronounce upon a certain key ; for although they modulate the voice according to the various ideas they express, yet they retain the same pitch of voice. Accent and emphasis require no elevation of the voice, but a more forcible expression on the same key. Cadence respects the last syllable only of a sentence ; which syllable is actually pronounced with a lower tone of voice ; but when words of several syllables close a period, all the syllables but the last, are pronounced on the same key as the rest of the sentence.

the purpose of treachery ; the force of the question depends on the last word, which is therefore to be pronounced with an elevation of voice. But in this question, "Where is *boasting* then?" the emphatical word is *boasting*, which of course requires an elevation of voice.

The most natural pitch of voice is that which we speak in ordinary conversation. Whenever the voice is raised above this key, pronunciation is difficult and fatiguing. There is a difference between a *loud* and an *high* voice. A person may speak much *louder* than he does in ordinary discourse, without any elevation of voice ; and may be heard distinctly, upon the same key, either in a private room or in a large assembly.

R U L E IV.

Let the sentiments you express be accompanied with proper tones, looks and gestures.

By *tones* I mean the various modulations of voice by which we naturally express the emotions and passions. By *looks* I mean the expression of the emotions and passions in the countenance.

Gestures are the various motions of the hands or body, which correspond to the several sentiments and passions which the speaker designs to express.

All these should be perfectly natural. They should be the same which we use in common conversation. A speaker should endeavor to feel what he speaks ; for the perfection of reading and speaking is, to pronounce the words as if the sentiments were our own.

If a person is rehearsing the words of an angry man, he should assume the same furious looks, his eyes should flash with rage, his gestures should be violent, and the tone of his voice threatening. If kindness is to be expressed, the countenance should be calm and placid, and wear a smile—the tone should be mild, and the motion of the hand inviting. An example of the first, we have in these words "Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels : " Of the last, in these words, "Come ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you, from the foundation of the world." A man who should repeat these different passages with the *same looks, tones and gestures*, would pass with his hearers for a very injudicious speaker.

The whole art of reading and speaking, all the rules of

eloquence may be comprised in this concise direction ;
Let a reader or a speaker express every word as if the sentiment were his own.

General Directions for expressing certain Passions or Sentiments.—
From the Art of Speaking.

Mirth or Laughter opens the mouth, crisps the nose, lessens the aperture of the eyes, and shakes the whole frame.

Perplexity draws down the eye-brows, hangs the head, casts down the eyes, closes the eye-lids, shuts the mouth, and pinches the lips—then suddenly the whole body is agitated, the person walks about busily, stops abruptly, talks to himself, &c.

Vexation adds to the foregoing, complaint, fretting, and lamenting.

Pity draws down the eye-brows, opens the mouth, and draws together the features.

Grief is expressed by weeping, stamping with the feet, lifting up the eyes to heaven, &c.

Melancholy is gloomy and motionless, the lower jaw falls, the eyes are cast down and half shut, words few and interrupted with sighs.

Fear opens the eyes and mouth, shortens the nose, draws down the eye-brows, gives the countenance an air of wildness ; the face becomes pale, the elbows are drawn back parallel with the sides, one foot is drawn back, the heart beats violently, the breath is quick, the voice weak and trembling. Sometimes it produces shrieks and fainting.

Shame turns away the face from the beholders ; covers it with blushes, casts down the head and eyes, draws down the eye-brows, makes the tongue to falter, or strikes the person dumb.

Remorse casts down the countenance, and clouds it with anxiety. Sometimes the teeth gnash, and the right hand beats the breast.

Courage steady and cool, opens the countenance, gives the whole form an erect and graceful air. The voice is firm, and the accents strong and articulate.

Boasting is loud and blustering. The eyes stare, the face is red and bloated, the mouth pouts, the voice is hollow, the arms akimbo, the head nods in a threatening manner, the right fist sometimes clenched and brandished.

Pride assumes a lofty look, the eyes open, the mouth pouting, the lips pinched, the words slow and stiff, with an

air of importance, the arms akimbo, and the legs at a distance or taking large strides.

Authority opens the countenance but draws down the eye-brows a little, so as to give the person an air of gravity.

Commanding requires a peremptory tone of voice and a severe look.

Inviting is expressed with a smile of complacency, the hand with the palm upward, drawn gently towards the body.

Hope brightens the countenance, arches the eye-brows, gives the eyes an eager wishful look, opens the mouth to half a smile, bends the body a little forward.

Love lights up a smile upon the countenance; the forehead is smoothed, the eye-brows arched, the mouth a little open, and smiling, the eyes languishing, the countenance assumes an eager wishful look, mixed with an air of satisfaction. The accents are soft and winning, the tone of the voice flattering, &c.

Wonder opens the eyes, and makes them appear prominent. The body is fixed in a contracted stooping posture, the mouth is open, the hands often raised. Wonder at first strikes a person dumb; then breaks forth into exclamations.

Curiosity opens the eyes and mouth, lengthens the neck, bends the body forward, and fixes it in one posture, &c.

Anger is expressed by rapidity, interruption, noise and trepidation, the neck is stretched out, the head nodding in a threatening manner. The eyes red, staring, rolling, sparkling; the eye-brows drawn down over them, the forehead wrinkled, the nostrils stretched, every vein swelled, every muscle strained. When anger is violent, the mouth is opened and drawn towards the ears, shewing the teeth in a gnashing posture; the feet stamping, the right hand thrown out, threatening with a clenched fist, and the whole frame agitated.

Pevishness is expressed in nearly the same manner, but with more moderation, the eyes a-squint upon the object of displeasure; the upper lip drawn disdainfully.

Malice sets the jaws, or gnashes with the teeth; sends flashes from the eyes, draws the mouth down towards the ears, clenches the fist and bends the elbows.

Envy is expressed in the same manner; but more moderately.

Aversion turns the face from the object; the hands spread out to keep it off.

Jealousy shews itself by restlessness, peevishness, thoughtfulness, anxiety, absence of mind. It is a mixture of a variety of passions, and assumes a variety of appearances.

Contempt assumes a haughty air ; the lips closed and pouting.

Modesty or *humility* bends the body forward, casts down the eyes. The voice is low, the words few, and tone of utterance submissive.

EXAMPLES for ILLUSTRATION.

Interrogation or Questioning.

One day, when the moon was under an eclipse, she complained thus to the sun of the discontinuance of his favors. My dearest friend, said she, why do you not shine upon me as you used to do ? Do I not shine upon thee ? said the sun : I am very sure that I intend it. O no ! replies the moon : but I now perceive the reason. I see that dirty planet the earth is got betwixt us.

Doddsley's Fables.

Life is short and uncertain : we have not a moment to lose. Is it prudent to throw away any of our time in tormenting ourselves or others, when we have little for honest pleasures ? Forgetting our weakness, we stir up mighty enmities, and fly to wound as if we were invulnerable. Wherefore all this bustle and noise ? The best use of a short life is, to make it agreeable to ourselves and to others. Have you cause of quarrel with your servant, your master, your king, your neighbor ? forbear a moment ; death is at hand, which makes all equal. What has a man to do with wars, tumults, ambushes ? You would destroy your enemy ? You lose your trouble ; death will do your business while you are at rest. And after all, when you have got your revenge, how short will be your joy or his pain ? While we are among men let us cultivate humanity : let us not be the cause of fear nor pain to one another. Let us despise injury, malice, and detraction ; and bear with an equal mind such transitory evils. While we speak, while we think, death comes up and closes the scene.

Art of thinking.

Wonder.

Then let us haste towards those piles of wonder
That scorn to bow beneath the weight of years—
Lo ! to my view the awful mansions rise,
The pride of art, the sleeping place of death !

Freneau.

Joy.

Let this auspicious day be ever sacred ;
 No mourning, no misfortunes happen on it ;
 Let it be mark'd for triumph and rejoicing ;
 Let happy lovers ever make it holy,
 Choose it to bless their hopes, and crown their wishes ;
 This happy day, that gives me my Calista.

Fair Penitent.

Then is Orestes blest !—My griefs are fled !
 Fled like a dream !—Methinks I tread in air !
 Surprising happiness ! unlook'd for joy !
 Never let love despair ! The prize is mine !
 Be smooth, ye seas, and, ye propitious winds,
 Blow from Epirus to the Spartan coast ! *Distrest Mother.*

Grief.

All dark, and comfortless !
 Where are those various objects that, but now,
 Employ'd my busy eyes ? Where those eyes ?
 Dead are their piercing rays, that lately shot
 O'er flow'ry vales to distant sunny hills,
 And drew with joy the vast horizon in.
 These groping hands are now my only guides,
 And feeling all my fight.
 O misery ! What words can sound my grief ?
 Shut from the living whilst among the living ;
 Dark as the grave amidst the bustling world.
 No more to view the beauty of the spring,
 Or see the face of kindred, or of friend. *Trag. of Lear.*

Courage.

A generous few, the vet'ran hardy gleanings
 Of many a hapless fight, with a fierce
 Heroic fire inspired each other ;
 Resolv'd on death, disdaining to survive
 Their dearest country—"If we fall," I cry'd,
 "Let us not tamely fall like passive cowards !
 No—let us live, or let us die like men !
 Come on, my friends. To Alfred we will cut
 Our glorious way ; or, as we nobly perish,
 Will offer to the genius of our country
 Whole hecatombs of Danes."—As if one soul
 Had mov'd them all, around their Heads they flash'd

Their flaming falchions—"Lead us to those Danes!
Our country! vengeance!" was the general cry.

Masque of Alfred.

Fear.

How ill this taper burns! Ha! who comes here?
I think, it is the weakness of mine eyes,
That shapes this monstrous apparition!
It comes upon me—Art thou any thing?
Art thou some god, some angel, or some devil?
That mak'st my blood cold, and my hair to stand?
Speak to me, what art thou?

Love.

Who can behold such beauty, and be silent?
Oh! I could talk of thee forever;
For ever fix and gaze on those dear eyes;
For every glance they send, darts through my soul. *Orphan.*

Anger.

Hear me, rash man; on thy allegiance hear me.
Since thou hast striven to make us break our vow,
(Which nor our nature nor our place can bear)
We banish thee for ever from our fight
And kingdom. If, when three days are expired,
Thy hated trunk be found in our dominions,
That moment is thy death.—Away!
By Jupiter this shall not be revok'd.

Trag. of Lear.

Contempt.

Away!—no woman could descend so low.
A skipping, dancing, worthless tribe you are,
Fit only for yourselves, you herd together;
And when the circling glass warms your vain hearts,
You talk of beauties that you never saw,
And fancy raptures that you never knew.

Fair Penitent.

Pity.

As in a theatre, the eyes of men,
After a well-grac'd actor leaves the stage,
Are idly bent on him that enters next,
Thinking his prattle to be tedious;
Even so, or with much more contempt, men's eyes
Did scowl on Richard. No man cried, God save him!
No joyful tongue gave him his welcome home:
Which, with such gentle sorrow, he shook off,
(His face still combating with tears and smiles,

The badges of his grief and patience,)
 That had not God, for some strong purpose, steel'd
 The hearts of men, they must have melted,
 And barbarism itself have pitied him. *Richard. II.*

Hatred.

How like a fawning publican he looks ?
 I hate him ; for he is a christian :
 But more, for that in low simplicity
 He lends out money gratis, and brings down
 The rate of usance here with us in Venice :
 If I can catch him once upon the hip
 I will feed fat the ancient grudge I bear him.
 He hates our sacred nation ; and he rails,
 Ev'n there where merchants most do congregate,
 On me, my bargains, and my well won thrift,
 Which he calls usury. Cursed be my tribe
 If I forgive him ! *Merch. of Venice.*

Pride.

Ask for what end the heav'nly bodies shine,
 Earth for whose use—Pride answers, “ 'Tis for mine.
 For me kind nature wakes her genial pow'r,
 Suckles each herb, and spreads out every flow'r ;
 Annual, for me, the grape, the rose, renew
 The juice nectarious and the balmy dew ;
 For me, the mine a thousand treasures brings ;
 For me, health gushes from a thousand springs :
 Seas roll to waft me, suns to light me rise :
 My footstool earth, my canopy the skies.” *Essay on man.*

Humility.

I know not how to thank you. Rude I am,
 In speech and manners ; never till this hour
 Stood I in such a presence : yet, my Lord,
 There's something in my breast which makes me bold
 To say, that Norval ne'er will shame thy favor. *Dougl.*

Melancholy.

There is a stupid weight upon my senses,
 A dismal sullen stillness, that succeeds
 The storm of rage and grief, like silent death
 After the tumult and the noise of life.
 Love was the informing active fire within :
 Now that is quench'd, the mass forgets to move,
 And longs to mingle with its kindred earth. *Fair Penitent.*

Commanding.

——— Silence, ye winds
 That make outrageous war upon the ocean ;
 And thou, old ocean, still thy boist'rous waves :
 Ye warring elements be hush'd as death,
 While I impose my dread commands on hell.
 And thou, profoundest hell, whose dreadful sway
 Is given to me by fate and demorgorgon—
 Hear, hear my powerful voice through all thy regions ;
 And, from thy gloomy caverns,—thunder thy reply.
Rinaldo and Armida.

Hope.

O hope, sweet flatterer, whose delusive touch
 Sheds on affected minds the balm of comfort,
 Relieves the load of poverty, sustains
 The captive bending with the weight of bonds,
 And smooths the pillow of disease and pain :
 Send back th' exploring messenger with joy,
 And let me hail thee from that friendly grove.

*Boadicea.**Boasting.*

My arm a nobler victory ne'er gain'd :
 And I am prouder to have pass'd that stream,
 Than that I drove a million o'er the plain.

*Lee's Alexander.**Perplexity.*

Go fellow, get thee home, provide some carts,
 And bring away the armour that is there.
 Gentlemen, will you go and muster men ?
 If I know how to order these affairs,
 Disorderly thus thrust into my hands,
 Never believe me.—All is uneven,
 And every thing is left at six and seven.

*Richard II.**Revenge.*

If it will feed nothing else, it will feed my revenge. He
 hath disgraced me, and hindred me of half a million,
 laughed at my losses, mocked at my gains, scorned my na-
 tion, thwarted my bargains, coole'd my friends, heated
 mine enemies. And what's his reason ? I am a jew. Hath
 not a jew eyes ? hath not a jew hands, organs, dimensions,
 senses, affection, passions ? Is he not fed with the same food
 hurt with the same weapons, subject to the same diseases,

healed by the same means, warmed and cooled by the same winter and summer, as a Christian is ? If you prick us, do we not bleed ? If you tickle us, do we not laugh ? If you poison us, do we not die ? and if you wrong us, shall we not revenge ? If we are like you in the rest, we will resemble you in that. If a Jew wrong a Christian, what is his humility ? revenge. If a Christian wrong a Jew, what should his sufferance be by Christian example ? why, revenge. The villainy you teach me, I will execute ; and it shall go hard, but I will better by the instruction.

Merch. of Venice.

Remorse.

I remember a mass of things, but nothing distinctly ; a quarrel, but nothing wherefore. O that men should put an enemy in their mouths, to steal away their brains ? that we should with joy, pleasance, revel, and applause, transform ourselves into beasts ?—I will ask him for my place again—he shall tell me I am a drunkard ! Had I as many mouths as Hydra, such an answer would stop them all. To be now a sensible man, by and by a fool, and presently a beast ! Every inordinate cup is unblest, and the ingredient is a devil.

Trag. of Othello.

In the following Lessons, there are many examples of antithesis, or opposition in the sense. For the benefit of the learner, some of these examples are distinguished by Italic letters ; and the words so marked are emphatical.

SELECT SENTENCES.

TEACHING.

CHAP. I.

TO be very active in laudable pursuits, is the distinguishing characteristic of a man of merit.

There is an heroic innocence, as well as an heroic courage.

There is a mean in all things. Even virtue itself has its stated limits; which not being strictly observed, it ceases to be virtue.

It is wiser to *prevent* a quarrel beforehand, than to *revenge* it afterwards.

It is much better to *reprove*, than to be angry *secretly*.

No revenge is more heroic, than that which torments envy, by doing good.

The discretion of a man deferreth his anger, and it is his glory to pass over a transgression.

Money, like manure, does no good till it is spread. There is no real use of riches, except in the distribution: the rest is all conceit.

A wise man will desire no more than what he may get justly, use soberly, distribute cheerfully, and live upon contentedly.

A contented mind, and a good conscience, will make a man happy in all conditions. He knows not how to *fear*, who *dares to die*.

There is but one way of fortifying the soul against all gloomy presages and terrors of the mind; and that is by securing to themselves the friendship and protection of that Being who disposes of events, and governs futurity.

Philosophy is then only valuable, when it serves for the law of life, and not for the ostentation of science.

C H A P. II.

WITHOUT a friend the world is but a wilderness. A man may have a *thousand intimate acquaintances*, and not a *friend* amongst them all. If you have *one friend*, think yourself happy.

When *once* you profess yourself a *friend*, endeavour to be *always* such. He can never have any true friends who is always changing them.

Prosperity *gains* friends, and adversity *tries* them.

Nothing more engages the affections of men, than a handsome address, and graceful conversation.

Complaisance renders a superior amiable, an equal agreeable, and an inferior acceptable.

Excess of ceremony shews *want* of breeding. That civility is best, which excludes all superfluous formality.

Ingratitude is a crime so shameful, that the man was never yet found who would acknowledge himself guilty of it.

Few things are impossible to industry and skill.

Diligence is never wholly lost.

There cannot be a greater treachery, than first to *raise* a confidence, and then *deceive* it.

By *others'* faults, *wise* men correct their *own*.

No man hath a thorough taste of *prosperity*, to whom *adversity* never happened.

When our vices *leave us*, we flatter ourselves that *we leave* them.

It is as great a point of wisdom to *hide* ignorance as to *discover* knowledge.

Pitch upon that course of life which is the most *excellent* ; and habit will render it the most *delightful*.

C H A P. III.

CUSTOM is the *plague* of wise men, and the *idol* of fools. As to be *perfectly* just, is an attribute of the divine nature ; to be so to the *utmost* of our abilities, is the *glory* of man.

No man was ever *cast down* with the *injuries* of fortune, unless he had before suffered himself to be *deceived* by her *favours*.

Anger may *glance* into the breast of a wise man, but *rests* only in the bosom of *fool*.

None more impatiently *suffer* injuries than those that are most forward in *doing* them.

By *taking* revenge, a man is but *even* with his enemy ; but in *passing* it over, he is *superior*.

To *err* is *human* ; to *forgive*, *divine*.

A more glorious victory cannot be gained over another man, than this, that when the *injury* began on *his* part, the *kindness* should begin on *ours*.

The *prodigal* robs his *heir*, the miser robs himself.

We should take a prudent care for the *future*, but so as to enjoy the *present*. It is no part of wisdom, to be miserable *to day*, because we may happen to be more so *to-morrow*.

To mourn *without measure* is *folly* ; not to mourn *at all*, *insensibility*.

Some would be thought to do great things, who are but tools and instruments ; like the fool who fancied he played upon the organs, when he only drew the bellows.

Though a man may become *learned* by *another's* learning, he never can be *wise* but by his *own* wisdom.

He who wants good sense is happy in having learning ; for he has thereby more ways of exposing himself.

It is ungenerous to give a man occasion to blush at his own *ignorance* in *one* thing, who perhaps may *excel* us in *many*.

No object is more pleasing to the eye, than the sight of a man whom you have obliged ; nor any music so agreeable to the ear, as the voice of one that owns you for his benefactor.

The coin that is most current amongst mankind is flattery ; the only benefit of which is, that by hearing what we are *not*, we may be instructed what we *ought* to be.

The character of the person who commends you, is to be considered before you set a value on his esteem. The wise man applauds *him* whom he thinks most *virtuous*, the rest of the world, *him* who is most *wealthy*.

The temperate man's pleasures are *durable*, because they are *regular* ; and all his life is *calm* and *serene*, because it is *innocent*.

A good man will love *himself* too well to *lose*, and his *neighbor* too well to *win*, an estate by gaming. The love of gaming will corrupt the best principles in the world.

C H A P. IV.

AN angry man who *suppresses* his passions, *thinks* worse than he *speaks* ; and an angry man that will *chide*, *speaks* worse than he *thinks*.

A good word is an *easy* obligation ; but not to speak ill requires only our silence, which costs us *nothing*.

It is to *affectation* the world owes its whole race of *coxcombs*. Nature in her whole drama never drew such a part ; she has sometimes made a *fool*, but a *coxcomb* is always of his *own* making.

It is the infirmity of *little* minds to be taken with *every* appearance, and dazzled with *every* thing that sparkles ; but *great* minds have but *little* admiration, because *few* things appear *new* to them.

It happens to men of learning, as to ears of corn ; they shoot up, and raise their heads high, while they are empty ; but when full, and swelled with grain, they begin to flag and droop.

He that is truly polite, knows how to contradict with respect, and to please without adulation, and is equally remote from an insipid complaisance, and a low familiarity.

The failings of good men are commonly more published in the world than their good deeds, and one fault of a deserving man, will meet with more reproaches, than all his virtues, praise. Such is the force of ill-will, and ill-nature.

It is harder to avoid censure, than to gain applause; for this may be done by one great or wise action in an age; but to escape censure, a man must pass his whole life without saying or doing one ill or foolish thing.

When Darius offered Alexander ten thousand talents to divide Asia equally with him, he answered: 'The earth cannot bear two suns, nor Asia, two kings. Parmenio, a friend of Alexander's, hearing the great offers that Darius had made, said, -Were I Alexander, I would accept them. So would I, replied Alexander, were I Parmenio.

An old age, unsupported with matter for discourse and meditation, is much to be dreaded. No state can be more destitute than that of him, who, when the delights of sense forsake him, has no pleasures of the mind.

Such is the condition of life that something is always wanted to happiness. In youth we have warm hopes, which are soon blasted by rashness and negligence, and great designs, which are defeated by inexperience. In age we have knowledge and prudence, without spirit to exert, or motives to prompt them. We are able to plan schemes and regulate measures, but have not time remaining to bring them to completion.

Truth is always consistent with itself, and needs nothing to help it out. It is always near at hand, and sits upon our lips, and is ready to drop out before we are aware: Whereas a lie is troublesome, and sets a man's invention upon the rack; and one trick needs a great many more to make it good.

The pleasure which affects the human mind with the most lively and transporting touches, is the sense that we act in the eye of infinite wisdom, power and goodness, that will crown our virtuous endeavors here with happiness hereafter, large as our desires, and lasting as our immortal souls; without this the highest state of life is insipid, and with it, the lowest is a paradise.

C H A P. V.

HONORABLE age is not that which standeth in length of time, nor which is measured by number of years; but wisdom is the grey hair unto man, and an unspotted life is old age.

Wickedness condemned by her own witness, is very timorous, and being pressed with conscience, always forecasth evil things ; for fear is nothing else, but a betraying of the succors which reason offereth.

A wise man will fear in every thing. He that contemneth small things shall fall by little and little.

A rich man beginning to fall is held up by his friends ; but a poor man being down is thrust away by his friends ; when a rich man is fallen he hath many helpers ; he speaketh things not to be spoken, and yet men justify him ; the poor man slipt and they rebuked him ; he spoke wisely, and could have no place. When a rich man speaketh every man holdeth his tongue, and lo ! what he saith they extol to the clouds ; but if a poor man speak, they say, what fellow is this ?

Many have fallen by the edge of the sword, but not so many as have fallen by the tongue. Well is he that is defended from it, and hath not passed through the venom thereof ; who hath not drawn the yoke thereof, nor been bound in her bonds ; for the yoke thereof is a yoke of iron, and the bands thereof are bands of brass ; the death thereof is an evil death.

My son, blemish not thy good deeds, neither use uncomfortable words, when thou givest any thing. Shall not the dew assuage the heat ? so is a word better than a gift. Lo, is not a word better than a gift ? but both are with a gracious man.

Blame not, before thou hast examined the truth ; understand first, and then rebuke.

If thou wouldest get a friend, prove him first, and be not hasty to credit him, for some men are friends for their own occasions, and will not abide in the day of trouble.

For sake not an old friend, for the new is not comparable to him ; a new friend is as new wine ; when it is old thou shalt drink it with pleasure.

A friend cannot be known in prosperity ; and an enemy cannot be hidden in adversity.

Admonish thy friend ; it may be he hath not done it ; and if he hath, that he do it no more. Admonish thy friend ; it may be he hath not said it ; or if he hath, that he speak it not again. Admonish a friend ; for many times it is a slander ; and believe not every tale. There is one that slippeth in his speech, but not from his heart ; and who is he that hath not offended with his tongue ?

Whoſo diſcovereth ſecrets loſeth his credit, and ſhall never find a friend to his mind.

Honor thy father with thy whole heart, and forget not the ſorrows of thy mother ; how canſt thou recompence them the things which they have done for thee ?

There is nothing ſo much worth as a mind well inſtructed.

The lips of talkers will be telling ſuch things as pertain not unto them ; but the words of ſuch as have underſtanding are weighed in the balance. The heart of fools is in their mouth, but the tongue of the wiſe is in their heart.

To labor, and to be contented with what a man hath, is a ſweet life.

Be not confident, even in a plain way.

Be in peace with many ; nevertheless have but one counſellor of a thouſand.

Let reaſon go before every enterprize, and counſel before every action.

C H A P. VI.

THE latter part of a wiſe man's life is taken up in curing the follies, prejudices, and falſe opinions he had contracted in the former.

Cenſure is a tax a man pays to the public for being eminent.

Very few men, properly ſpeaking, live at preſent, but are providing to live another time.

Party is the madneſs of many, for the gain of a few.

To endeavor to work upon the vulgar with fine ſenſe, is like attempting to hew blocks of marble with a razor.

Superſtition is the ſpleen of the ſoul.

He who tells a lie is not ſenſible how great a taſk he undertakes ; for he muſt be forced to invent twenty more to maintain that one.

Some people will never learn any thing ; for this reaſon, becauſe they underſtand every thing too ſoon.

Whiſt an author is yet living, we eſtimate his powers by the worſt performance. When he is dead, we rate them by his beſt.

Men are grateful, in the ſame degree that they are reſentful.

Young men are ſubtle arguers ; the cloak of honor covers all their faults, as that of paſſion, all their follies.

Economy is no diſgrace ; it is better living on a little, than out-living a great deal.

Next to the ſatiſfaction I receive in the proſperity of an honeſt man, I am beſt pleaſed with the confuſion of a rascal.

What is often termed shyness, is nothing more than refined sense, and an indifference to common observations.

To endeavor all one's days to fortify our minds with learning and philosophy, is to spend so much in armor, that one has nothing left to defend.

Deference often shrinks and withers as much upon the approach of intimacy, as the sensitive plant does upon the touch of one's finger.

Modesty makes large amends for the pain it gives the persons who labor under it, by the prejudice it affords every worthy person in their favor.

The difference there is betwixt honor and honesty seems to be chiefly in the motive. The honest man does that from duty, which the man of honor does for the sake of character.

A liar begins with making falsehood appear like truth, and ends with making truth itself appear like falsehood.

Virtue should be considered as a part of taste : and we should as much avoid deceit, or sinister meaning in discourse, as we should puns, bad language, or false grammar.

The higher character a person supports, the more he should regard his minutest actions.

C H A P. VII.

DEFERENCE is the most complicated, the most indirect, and the most elegant of all compliments.

To be once a rake and to glory in the character, discovers at the same time a bad disposition, and a bad taste.

How is it possible to expect that mankind will take advice, when they will not so much as take warning ?

Although men are accused for not knowing their own weakness, yet perhaps as few know their own strength. It is in men as in foils, where sometimes there is a vein of gold which the owner knows not of.

Fine sense and exalted sense are not half so valuable as common sense. There are forty men of wit for one man of sense ; and he that will carry nothing about with him but gold, will be every day at a loss for want of ready change.

Learning is like mercury, one of the most powerful and excellent things in the world in skilful hands ; in unskilful, most mischievous.

A man should never be ashamed to own he has been in the wrong ; which is but saying in other words, that he is wiser to day than he was yesterday.

Wherever I find a great deal of gratitude in a poor man, I take it for granted there would be as much generosity if he were a rich man.

It often happens that those are the best people, whose characters have been most injured by slanders; as we usually find that to be the sweetest fruit, which the birds have been picking at.

The eye of a critic is often like a microscope, made so very fine and nice, that it discovers the atoms, grains, and minutest articles, without ever comprehending the whole, comparing the parts, or seeing all at once the harmony.

Honor is but a fictitious kind of honesty; a mean, but a necessary substitute for it, in societies which have none: it is a sort of paper-credit, with which men are obliged to trade, who are deficient in the sterling cash of true morality and religion.

Persons of great delicacy should know the certainty of the following truth: there are abundance of cases which occasion suspense, in which whatever they determine they will repent of their determination; and this through a propensity of human nature to fancy happiness in those schemes which it does not pursue.

C H A P. VIII.

WHAT a piece of work is man! how noble in reason! how infinite in faculties! in form and moving, how express and admirable! in action how like an angel! in apprehension how like a God!

If to do, were as easy as to know what were good to do, chapels had been churches, and poor men's cottages, princes' palaces. He is a good divine that follows his own instructions: I can easier teach twenty what were good to be done, than to be one of the twenty to follow my own teaching.

Men's evil manners live in brass; their virtues we write in water.

The web of our life is of a mingled yarn, good and ill together; our virtues would be proud, if our faults whipped them not; and our crimes would despair, if they were not cherished by our virtues.

The sense of death is most in apprehension;
And the poor beetle that we tread upon,
In corporal sufferance feels a pang as great,
As when a giant dies.

How far the little candle throws his beam
So shines a good deed in a naughty world.

—————Love all, trust a few,
Do wrong to none ; be able for thine enemy.
Rather in power than in use : keep thy friend
Under thy own life's key : be check'd for silence,
But never talk'd for speech.

Our indiscretion sometimes serves us well,
When our deep plots do fail : and that should teach us,
There's a divinity that shapes our ends,
Rough-hew them how we will.

What stronger breast-plate than a heart untainted ?
Thrice is he arm'd that hath his quarrel just ;
And he but naked (though lock'd up in steel)
Whose conscience with injustice is corrupted.

The cloud-capt towers, the gorgeous palaces,
The solemn temples, the great globe itself,
Yea, all which it inherits, shall dissolve ;
And, like the baseless fabric of a vision,
Leave not a wreck behind ! We are such stuff
As dreams are made on, and our little life
Is rounded with a sleep.

—————So it falls out,
That what we have we prize not to the worth
While we enjoy it ; but being lack'd and lost,
Why then we wreak the value ; then we find
The virtue that possession would not show us
Whilst it was ours.

Cowards die many times before their deaths ;
The valiant never taste of death but once.

There is some soul of goodness in things evil,
Would men observingly distill it out,
For our bad neighbour makes us early stirrers :
Which is both healthful, and good husbandry,
Besides, they are our outward consciences.
And preachers to us all : admonishing
That we should dress us fairly for our end.

O momentary grace of mortal men,
Which we more hunt for than the grace of God !

Who builds his hope in the air of men's fair looks,
Lives like a drunken sailor on a mast,
Ready with every nod to tumble down
Into the fatal bowels of the deep.

—————Who shall go about
To cozen fortune, and be honorable
Without the stamp of merit ; let none presume
To wear an undeserved dignity.
O that estates, degrees, and offices,
Were not derived corruptly, that clear honor
Were purchased by the merit of the wearer !
How many then should cover, that stand bare !
How many be commanded, that command !

—————'Tis slander !
Whose edge is sharper than a sword ; whose tongue
Outvenoms all the worms of Nile ; whose breath
Rides on the posting winds, and doth belie
All corners of the world. Kings, queens and states,
Maids, matrons, ray the secrets of the grave,
This viperous slander enters.

There is a tile in the affairs of men,
Which, taken at the flood, leads on to fortune :
Omitted, all the voyage of their life
Is bound in shallows, and in miseries.

To-morrow, and to-morrow, and to-morrow,
Creeps in this pretty space from day to day,
To the last syllable of recorded time,
And all our yesterdays have lighted fools
The way to dusky death. Out, out, brief candle :
Life's but a walking shadow, a poor player,
That struts and frets his hour upon the stage,
And then is heard no more ? It is a tale
Told by an idiot, full of sound and fury,
Signifying nothing.

He that would pass the latter part of his life, with honor
and decency, must, when he is *young*, consider that he shall
one day be *old*, and remember, when he is *old* that he had
once been *young*.

Avarice is always poor, but poor by her own fault,
The maxim which Periander of Corinth, one of the seven

sages of Greece, left as a memorial of his knowledge and benevolence, was, "Be master of your anger." He considered anger as the great disturber of human life; the chief enemy both of public happiness and private tranquility, and thought he could not lay on posterity a stronger obligation to reverence his memory, than by leaving them a salutary caution against this outrageous passion.

The universal axiom, in which all complaisance is included, and from which flow all the formalities which custom has established in civilized nations, is—"That no man should give any preference to himself,"—a rule so comprehensive and certain, that perhaps it is not easy for the mind to imagine an incivility without supposing it to be broken.

The foundation of content must spring up in a man's own mind: and he who has so little knowledge of human nature as to seek happiness by changing any thing but his own disposition, will waste his life in fruitless efforts, and multiply griefs which he purposes to remove.

No rank in life precludes the efficacy of a well timed compliment. When Queen Elizabeth asked an Ambassador how he liked her ladies, he replied, "It was hard to judge of stars in presence of the sun."

The crime which has been once committed, is committed again with less reluctance.

The great disturbers of our happiness in this world, are our desires, our griefs, and our fears: and to all these the *consideration of mortality* is a certain and adequate remedy. "Think (says Epictetus) frequently on poverty, banishment, and death, and thou wilt never indulge violent desires or give up thy heart to mean sentence."

The certainty of life cannot be long, and the probability that it will be shorter than nature allows, ought to awaken every man to the active prosecution of whatever he is desirous to perform. It is true that no diligence can ascertain success; death may intercept the swiftest career; but he who is cut off in the execution of an honest undertaking, has at least the honor of falling in his rank, and has fought the battle, though he missed the victory.

When we act according to our duty, we commit the event to him by whose laws our actions are governed, and who will suffer none to be finally punished for obedience. But when in prospect of some good, whether natural or moral,

we break the rules prescribed to us, we withdraw from the direction of superior wisdom, and take all consequences upon ourselves.

Employment is the great instrument of intellectual dominion. The mind cannot retire from its enemy into total vacancy, or turn aside from one object, but by passing to another.

Without frugality none can be rich, and with it, very few would be poor.

Though in every age there are some, who, by bold adventures or by favorable accidents, rise suddenly into riches; the bulk of mankind must owe their affluence to small and gradual profits, below which their expenses must be resolutely reduced.

A man's voluntary expences should not exceed his income.

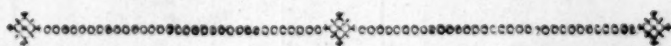
Let not a man anticipate uncertain profits.

The happiness of the generality of the people is nothing if it is not known, and very little if it is not envied.

To improve the golden moment of opportunity, and catch the good that is within our reach, is the great art of life. Many wants are suffered which might have once been supplied, and much time is lost in regretting the time which has been lost before.

One of the Golden precepts of *Pythagorus* directs us—

“That a friend should not be hated for little faults.”



N A R R A T I O N .

C H A P. IX.

Story of the COBLER and his SON.

A Young man, son of a cobbler in a small village near Madrid, having pushed his fortune in the Indies, returned to his native country with a considerable stock, and set up as a banker in Madrid. In his absence, his parents frequently talked of him, praying fervently that Heaven would take him under its protection; and the vicar being their friend, gave them frequently the public prayers of the congregation for him. The banker was not less dutiful on his part; for, so soon as he was settled, he mounted on horseback, and went alone to the village. It was ten at night before he got there; and the honest cobbler was a bed with

his wife in a sound sleep when he knocked at the door. Open the door, says the banker; 'tis your son Francillo. Make others believe that if you can, cried the old man, starting from his sleep; go about your business, you theiving rogues, here is nothing for you: Francillo, if not dead, is now in the Indies. He is no longer there replied the banker; he is returned home, and it is he who now speaks to you; open your door and receive him. Jacobo, said the woman, let us rise then; I really believe 'tis Francillo, I think I know his voice. The father, starting from bed, lighted a candle; and the mother putting on her gown in a hurry, opened the door. Looking earnestly on Francillo, she flung her arms about his neck, and hugged him with the utmost affection. Jacobo embraced his son in his turn; and all three transported with joy after so long absence, had no end in expressing their tenderness. After these pleasing transports; the banker put his horse into the stable, where he found an old milch cow, nurse to the whole family. He then gave the old folks an account of his voyage, and of all the riches he had brought from Peru. They listened greedily, and every the least particular of his relation made on them a sensible impression of grief or joy. Having finished his story, he offered them a part of his estate, and intreated his father not to work any more. No, my son, said Jacobo, I love my trade, and will not leave it off. Why, replied the banker, is it not now high time to take your ease? I do not propose your living with me at Madrid; I know well that a city life will not please you: enjoy your own way of living; but give over your hard labor, and pass the remainder of your days in ease and plenty. The mother seconded the son: and Jacobo yielded. To please you, Francillo, said he, I will not work any more for the public, but will only mend my own shoes and those of my good friend the vicar. The agreement being concluded, the banker eat a couple of eggs, and went to his bed, enjoying that pleasing satisfaction which none but dutiful children can feel or understand. The next morning the banker, leaving his parents a purse of three hundred ducats, returned to Madrid: but was surprised to see Jacobo, at his house a few days thereafter. My father, said he, what brings you here? Francillo, answered the honest cobbler, I have brought your purse; take it again; for I desire to live by my trade, and have been ready to die with uneasiness ever since I left off working.

C H A P. X.

HONESTY REWARDED.

PERRIN lost both parents before he could articulate their names, and was obliged to a charity house for his education. At the age of fifteen he was hired by a farmer to be a shepherd, in the neighborhood of Lucetta, who kept her father's sheep. They often met, and were fond of being together. Five years thus passed, when their sensations became more serious. Perrin proposed to Lucetta to demand her from her father: she blushed, and confessed her willingness. As she had an errand to town next day, the opportunity of her absence was chosen for making the proposal. You want to marry my daughter, said the old man. Have you a house to cover her, or money to maintain her? Lucetta's fortune is not enough for both. It won't do, Perrin, it won't do. But replied Perrin, I have hands to work; I have laid up twenty crowns of my wages, which will defray the expence of the wedding: I'll work harder, and lay up more. Well, said the old man, you are young, and may wait a little: get rich, and my daughter is at your service. Perrin waited for Lucetta's returning in the evening. Has my father given you a refusal, cried Lucetta? Ah Lucetta, replied Perrin, how unhappy am I for being poor? but I have not lost all hopes: my circumstances may change for the better. As they were never tired of conversing together, the night drew on, and it became dark. Perrin, making a false step, fell on the ground. He found a bag, which was heavy. Drawing toward a light in the neighbourhood, he found that it was filled with gold. I thank heaven, cries Perrin, in a transport, for being favorable to our wishes. This will satisfy your father, and make us happy. In their way to her father's house, a thought struck Perrin, "This money is not ours: it belongs to some stranger; and perhaps this moment he is lamenting the loss of it. Let us go to the vicar for advice; he has always been kind to me." Perrin put the bag into the vicar's hand, saying, that at first he looked on it as a providential present to remove the only obstacle to their marriage; but that he now doubted whether he could lawfully retain it. The vicar eyed the lovers with attention. He admired their honesty, which appeared even to surpass their

affection. Perrin, said he, cherish these sentiments : Heaven will bless you. We will endeavor to find out the owner ; he will reward thy honesty : I will add what I can spare : you shall have Lucetta. The bag was advertised in the newspapers, and cried in the neighboring parishes. Some time having elapsed, and the money not demanded, the vicar carried it to Perrin. " These twelve thousand livres bear at present no profit : you may reap the interest at least. Lay them out in such a manner as to ensure the sum itself to the owner, if he shall appear." A farm was purchased, and the consent of Lucetta's father to the marriage was obtained. Perrin was employed in husbandry, and Lucetta in family affairs. They lived in perfect cordiality ; and two children endeared them still more to each other. Perrin one evening returning homeward from his work, saw a chaise overturned, with two gentlemen in it. He ran to their assistance, and offered them every accomodation his small house could afford. This spot cried one of the gentlemen, is very fatal to me. Ten years ago I lost here twelve thousand livres. Perrin listened with attention. What search made you for them ? said he. It was not in my power, replied the stranger, to make any search. I was hurrying to Port l'Orient to embark for the Indies, for the vessel was ready to sail. Next morning Perrin shewed to his guests his house, his garden, his cattle, and mentioned the produce of his fields. " All these are your property," addressing the gentleman who had lost the bag ; " the money fell into my hands ; I purchased this farm with it ; the farm is your's. The vicar has an instrument which secures your property, though I had died without seeing you." The stranger read the instrument with emotion : He looked on Perrin, Lucetta, and the children. Where am I ? cried he, and what do I hear ? What virtue in people so low ! have you any other land but this farm ? No, replied Perrin ; but you will have occasion for a tenant, and I hope you will allow me to remain here. Your honesty deserves a better recompence, answered the stranger. My success in trade has been great, and I have forgot my loss. You are well entitled to this little fortune : keep it as your own. What man in the world would have acted like Perrin ? Perrin and Lucetta shed tears of affection and joy. " My dear children," said he, " kiss the hand of your benefactor." Lucetta, this farm now belongs to us, and we can now enjoy it

without anxiety or remorse. Thus was honesty rewarded. Let those who desire the reward practise it.



C H A P. XI.

CHARACTER of a young LADY.

SOPHIA is not a beauty, but in her presence beauties are discontented with themselves. At first she scarcely appeared pretty; but the more she is beheld, the more agreeable she appears. She gains when others lose, and what she gains she never loses. She is equalled by none in a sweet expression of countenance: and without dazzling beholders, she interests them. She loves dress and is a good judge of it; despises finery, but dresses with peculiar grace, mixing simplicity with elegance. Ignorant she is of what colours are in fashion; but knows well what suits her complexion. She covers her beauties; but so slightly, or rather artfully, as to give play to the imagination. She prepares herself for managing a family of her own, by managing that of her father. Cookery is familiar to her, with the price and quality of provisions; and she is a ready accountant. Her chief view, however, is to serve her mother and lighten her cares. She holds cleanness and neatness to be indispensable in a woman; and that a sattern is disgusting, especially if beautiful.

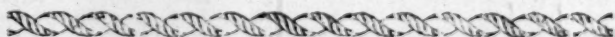
The attention given to externals, does not make her overlook her more material duties. Sophia's understanding is solid, without being profound. Her sensibility is too great for a perfect equality of temper; but her sweetness renders that inequality harmless. A harsh word does not make her angry; but her heart swells, and she retires to disburden it by weeping. Recalled by her father and mother, she comes at the instant wiping her eyes and appearing chearful. She suffers with patience any wrong done her; but is impatient to repair any wrong she has done, and does it so cordially as to make it appear meritorious. If she happen to disoblige a companion, her joy and her caresses, when restored to favor, shew the burden that lay upon her good heart.

The love of virtue is Sophia's ruling passion. She loves it, because no other thing is so lovely: she loves it, because it is the glory of the female sex: she loves it as the only road to happiness, misery being the sure attendant of a woman without virtue: she loves it, as dear to her respectable

father and tender mother. These sentiments inspire her with a degree of enthusiasm, that elevates her soul and subdues every irregular appetite.

Of the absent she never talks but with circumspection, her female acquaintance especially. She has remarked, that what renders women prone to detraction is talking of their own sex; and that they are more equitable with respect to the men. Sophia therefore never talks of women, but to express the good she knows of them; of others she says nothing.

Without much knowledge of the world, she is attentive, obliging, and graceful in all she does. A good disposition does more for her than much art does for others. She possesses a degree of politeness, which, void of ceremony, proceeds from a desire to please, and which consequently never fails to please.



C H A P. XII.

MODESTY, DOUBT, and TENDER AFFECTION.

AGATHOCLES and CALISTA.

CALISTA was young and beautiful, endowed with a great share of wit and solid sense. Agathocles, whose age very little exceeded her's, was well made, brave, and prudent. He had the good fortune to be introduced to Calista's: where his looks wandering indifferently over a numerous circle, soon distinguished and fixed upon her.

But recovering from the short extacy occasioned by the first sight, he immediately reproached himself as being guilty of rudeness to the rest of the company; a fault which he had endeavored to correct, by looking round on other objects. Vain attempts! They were attracted by a powerful charm, and turned again towards Calista. He blushed as well as she, while a sweet emotion, till then unfelt, produced a kind of fluttering in his heart, and confusion in his countenance.

They both became at the same time, more timid and more curious. He was pleased with gazing at Calista; which he could not do without trembling; whilst Calista secretly satisfied with this flattering preference, cast her eyes on him by stealth. They were both under an apprehension, but especially Calista, of being caught by the other in the fact; and yet caught they were almost every moment.

The hour of separation came, which to them appeared too sudden : melancholy were the reflections they made on the rapidity of time. Imagination, however, did not permit them to be entirely absent from each other ; for the image of Calista was deeply engraved on the mind of Agathocles ; and his features were strongly impressed on that of Calista. They both appeared less cheartful the rest of the day. A lively sentiment, which they did not well comprehend themselves, entirely employed their minds, in spite of every attempt to divert themselves.

Two days passed without seeing one another again ; and tho' this interval of time had been filled up either by business or recreations ; yet they both, notwithstanding, experienced a weariness and dissatisfaction in their minds, for which they could no way account. But the moment which brought them together again, explained it to them : The perfect contentment they felt in each other's company, made them sensible of the real source of their melancholy.

Agathocles took more courage that day ; He addressed Calista in a most obliging manner, and had the happiness to converse with her for the first time. As yet he had seen only her outward charms ; but now he discovered the beauty of her mind, the integrity of her heart, the dignity of her sentiments, and the delicacy of her wit ; but what charmed him the most, was the opinion he conceived that she did not judge him unworthy of her esteem.

From this time he made her frequent visits, in every one of which he discovered some new perfection in the fair Calista. This is the characteristic of true merit ; it gains by being exposed to the eye of a judicious person. A man of sense will soon dislike a coquette, a fool, or a giddy woman : But if he fall in love with a woman of merit, time, far from weakening, will only strengthen and augment his passion.

The fixed inclination of Agathocles convinced him now, that what he felt for Calista, was love, and that of the most tender nature. Thus he knew, but Calista did not as yet know it or at least had not learnt it from his lips. Love is timorous and diffident. A bold suitor is not the real lover of the lady whom he addresses : he seeks for nothing but pleasure. Agathocles at last resolved to open his heart to Calista ; but he did not do it in the affected language of a romantic passion. " Lovely Calista, said he ingenuously, it is not mere esteem that binds me to you, but a most pass-

ionate and tender love. I feel that I cannot live without you ; can you, without violence to your inclinations, consent to make me happy ? I may love you without offence ; 'tis a tribute due to your merit : but may I flatter myself with the hopes of some small return ?”

A coquette would have affected to be displeased at such a declaration. But Calista not only listened to her lover without interrupting him, but answered him without ill-nature, and gave him leave to hope. Nor did she put his constancy to a tedious trial ; the happiness for which he sighed was no longer delayed than was necessary to prepare the ceremony. The marriage settlements were easily regulated betwixt the parties ; for interest was out of the question ; the chief article consisted in the mutual exchange of hearts ; which was already fulfilled.

What will be the lot of the new-married couple ? The happiest, I may venture to foretell that mortals can enjoy upon earth. No pleasures are comparable to those that affect the heart ; and there are none, as I have observed before, that affect it with such exquisite delight, as loving and being beloved. To this tender union we can never apply the words of Democritus, that *the pleasure of love is but a short epilepsy*. He meant, without doubt, that mere sensual pleasure, which has so little in it of the nature of love, that a man may enjoy it without loving, and love without ever enjoying it.

They will be constant in their love. This I dare also to predict ; and I know the reason. Their affection is not founded on the dazzling charms of beauty ; they are both the friends of virtue ; they love each other on this account ; they will therefore, continue to love, as long as they are virtuous ; and their union itself is a pledge of their perseverance ; for nothing so much secures our continuance in the paths of virtue, as to have perpetually before our eyes the example of a person whom we love.

Nothing is capable of disturbing their happiness, but those disasters and misfortunes from which their love cannot shelter them. But supposing such a reverse of fortune, would not their fate in this respect be common with that of the rest of mankind ? Those who have never tasted the pleasures of love, are not exempt from the like casualties ; and the lover is, at least, a gainer in regard to those pleasures, which constitute no small part of the happiness of life.

Besides, even love itself will greatly diminish the sense of their misfortunes. For love has the peculiar property of alleviating the sufferings of two fond hearts, and of rendering their pleasures more exquisite. By this communication of distress, they seem to divide its weight: and, on the contrary, by participation their satisfaction is doubled. As a squadron of horse is with greater difficulty broke thro by the enemy, in proportion to its closeness; so the happy pair resist the attacks of adversity with so much the more strength and success, as they are the more closely united.

C H A P. XIII.

SORROW, PIETY, DEVOTION, FILIAL OBEDIENCE.

Story of LA ROCHE.

MORE than forty years ago, an English philosopher, whose works have since been read and admired by all Europe, resided at a little town in France. Some disappointments in his native country had first driven him abroad, and he was afterwards induced to remain there, from having found, in his retreat, where the connections even of nation and language were avoided, a perfect seclusion and retirement, highly favorable to the developement of abstract subjects, in which he excelled all the writers of his time.

2. Perhaps in the structure of such a mind, the finer and more delicate sensibilities are seldom known to have place, or, if originally implanted there, are in a great measure extinguished by the exertions of intense study and profound investigation. Hence the idea of philosophy and unfeelingness being united, has become proverbial, and in common language, the former word is often used to express the latter. Our philosopher has been censured by some, as deficient in warmth and feeling; but the mildness of his manners has been allowed by all; and it is certain, that if he was not easily melted into compassion, it was, at least, not difficult to awaken his benevolence.

3. One morning, while he sat busied in those speculations which afterwards astonished the world, an old female domestic, who served him for a housekeeper, brought him word, that an elderly gentleman and his daughter had arrived in the village, the preceeding evening, on their way to some distant country, and that the father had been suddenly seized in the night with a dangerous disorder, which the people of

the inn, where they lodged, feared would prove mortal : That she had been sent for as having some knowledge of medicine, the village surgeon being then absent ; and that it was truly piteous to see the good old man, who seemed not so much affected by his own distress, as by that which it caused to his daughter.

4. Her master laid aside the volume in his hand, and broke off the chain of ideas it had inspired. His night-gown was exchanged for a coat, and he followed his governante to the sick man's apartment. It was the best in the little inn where they lay, but a paltry one notwithstanding. Our philosopher was obliged to stoop as he entered it. It was floored with earth, and above were the joists not plastered and hung with cobwebs.

5. On a flock-bed at one end, lay the old man whom he came to visit ; at the foot of it sat his daughter. She was dressed in a clean white bed-gown ; her dark locks hung loosely over it as she bent forward, watching the languid looks of her father. The philosopher and his house-keeper had stood some moments in the room without the young lady's being sensible of their entering it.

6. Mademoiselle ! said the old woman at last, in a soft tone. She turned, and showed one of the finest faces in the world. It was touched, not spoiled with sorrow ; and when she perceived a stranger, whom the old woman now introduced to her, a blush at first and then the gentle ceremonial of native politeness, which the affliction of the time tempered, but did not extinguish, crossed it for a moment, and changed its expression. It was sweetness all however, and our philosopher felt it strongly.

7. It was not time for words ; he offered his service in a few sincere ones. " Monsieur lies miserable ill here " said the governante ; " if he could possibly be moved any where. " " If he could be moved to our house, " said her master. He had a spare bed for a friend, and there was a great room, unoccupied next to the governante's. It was contrived accordingly.

8. The scruples of the stranger, who could look scruples, tho' he could not speak them, were overcome, and the bashful reluctance of his daughter gave way to her belief of its use to her father. The sick man was wrapped in blankets and carried across the street to the English gentleman's. The old woman helped the daughter to nurse him there. The

surgeon who arrived soon after, prescribed a little and nature did much for him ; in a week he was able to thank his benefactor.

9. By that time his host had learned the name and character of his guest. He was a Protestant and clergyman of Switzerland, called *La Roche*, widower, who had lately buried his wife, after a long lingering illness, for which travelling had been prescribed ; and was now returning home after an ineffectual journey, with his only child, the daughter we have mentioned.

10. He was a devout man as became his profession. He possessed devotion in all its warmth, but with none of its asperity ; I mean that asperity which men, who are called devout, sometimes indulge. The philosopher, tho he felt no devotion, never quarrelled with it in others. His governante joined the old man and his daughter, in the prayers and thanksgiving which they put up on his recovery ; for she too was a heretic, in the phrase of the village.

11. The philosopher walked out with his long staff and his dog, and left them to their prayers and thanksgivings. " My master," said the old woman, " alas ! he is not a Christian, but he is the best of unbelievers.—Not a Christian ! exclaimed Mademoiselle *La Roche*, " yet he saved my father ! Heaven bless him for it ; I would he were a Christian."

12. " There is a pride in human knowledge, my child," said her father, " which often blinds men to the sublime truths of revelation ; hence there are opposers of christianity among men of virtuous lives, as well as among those of dissipated and licentious characters. Nay, sometimes I have known the latter more easily converted to the true faith than the former, because the fume of passion is more easily dissipated than the mist of false theory and delusive speculation." " But this philosopher" said his daughter, " alas ! my father, he shall be a Christian before he dies."

13. She was interrupted by the arrival of their landlord—He took her hand with an air of kindness—She drew it away from him in silence ; threw down her eyes to the ground and left the room. " I have been thanking God," said the good *La Roche*, " for my recovery." " That is right," replied his landlord. " I should not wish," continued the old man, hesitatingly, " to think otherwise. Did I not look up with gratitude to that Being, I should barely

be satisfied with my recovery, as a continuation of life, which, it may be, is not a real good. Alas! I may live to wish I had died, that you had left me to die, Sir, instead of kindly relieving me (clasping the philosopher's hand;) but when I look on this renovated being as the gift of the Almighty, I feel a far different sentiment—my heart dilates with gratitude and love to him; it is prepared for doing his will, not as a duty but as a pleasure, and regard every breach of it, not with disapprobation, but with horror.”

14. “ You say right, my dear Sir,” replied the philosopher; “ but you are not yet re-established enough to talk much—you must take care of your health, and neither study nor preach for some time. I have been thinking over a scheme that struck me to day, when you mentioned your intended departure. I was never in Switzerland; I have a great mind to accompany your daughter and you into that country. I will help to take care of you by the road; for as I was your first physician, I hold myself responsible for your cure.”

15. *La Roche's* eyes glistened at the proposal; his daughter was called and told of it. She was equally pleased with her father; for they really loved their landlord—not perhaps the less for his infidelity; at least that circumstance mixed a sort of pity with their regard for him—their souls were not of a mould for harsher feelings—hatred never dwelt with them.

16. They travelled by short stages; for the philosopher was as good as his word, in taking care that the old man should not be fatigued. The parties had time to be well acquainted with one another, and their friendship was increased by acquaintance. *La Roche* found a degree of simplicity and gentleness in his companion, which is not always annexed to the character of a learned or a wise man.

17. His daughter, who was prepared to be afraid of him, was equally undeceived. She found in him nothing of that self-importance which superior parts or great cultivation of them is apt to confer. He talked of every thing but philosophy and religion; he seemed to enjoy every pleasure and amusement of ordinary life, and to be interested in the most common topics of discourse; when his knowledge or learning at any time appeared, it was delivered with the utmost plainness, and without the least show of dogmatism.

18. On his part he was charmed with the society of the

good clergyman and his lovely daughter. He found in them the guileless manners of the earliest times, with the culture and accomplishments of the most refined ones. Every better feeling, warm and vivid; every ungente one, repressed or overcome. He was not addicted to love; but he felt himself happy, in being the friend of *Mademoiselle La Roche*, and sometimes envied her father the possession of such a child.

19. After a journey of eleven days, they arrived at the dwelling of *La Roche*. It was situated in one of those valleys in the Canton of Berne, where nature seems to repose in quiet, and has enclosed her retreat with mountains inaccessible. A stream that spent its fury in the hills above, ran in front of the house, and a broken water-fall was seen through the woods, that covered its sides; below, it circled round a tufted plain, and formed a little lake in front of a village, at the end of which appeared the spire of *La Roche's* church, rising above a clump of beeches.

20. The philosopher enjoyed the beauty of the scene; but to his companions it recalled the memory of a wife and a parent they had lost. The old man's sorrow was silent; his daughter sobbed and wept. Her father took her hand, kissed it twice, pressed it to his bosom, threw up his eyes to heaven; and having wiped off a tear that was just about to drop from each, began to point out to his guest some of the most striking objects which the prospect afforded. The philosopher interpreted all this; and he could but slightly censure the creed from which it arose.

21. They had not been long arrived, when a number of *La Roche's* parishioners, who had heard of his return, came to the house to see and welcome him. The honest folks were awkward, but sincere in their professions of friendship. They made some attempts at condolence; it was too delicate for their handling; but *La Roche* took it in good part. "It has pleased God," said he; and they saw he had settled the matter with himself. Philosophy could not have done so much with a thousand words.

22. It was now evening, and the good peasants were about to depart, when a clock was heard to strike seven, and the hour was followed by a particular chime. The country folks who came to welcome their pastor, turned their looks towards him at the sound; he explained their meaning to his guest. "That is the signal," said he,

"for our evening exercise ; this is one of the nights of the week, in which some of my parishioners are wont to join in it ; a little rustic saloon serves for the chapel of our family, and such of the good people as are with us ; if you choose rather to walk out, I will furnish you with an attendant ; or here are a few old books which may afford you some entertainment within."

23. "By no means," answered the philosopher, "I will attend Mademoiselle at her devotions." "She is our organist," said *La Roche* ; "our neighbourhood is the country of musical mechanism, and I have a small organ, fitted up for the purpose of assisting our singing." "It is an additional inducement," replied the other, and they walked into the room together.

24. At the end stood the organ mentioned by *La Roche* ; before it was a curtain, which his daughter drew aside, and placing herself on a seat within, and drawing the curtain close, so as to save her the awkwardness of an exhibition, began a voluntary, solemn and beautiful in the highest degree. The philosopher was no musician, but he was not altogether insensible to music ; this fastened on his mind more strongly, from its beauties being unexpected.

25. The solemn prelude introduced a hymn, in which such of the audience as could sing, immediately joined : the words were mostly taken from holy writ : it spoke the praises of God, and his care of good men. Something was said of the death of the just : of such as die in the Lord. "The organ was touched with a hand less firm ;—it paused ;—it ceased ;—and the sobbing of Mademoiselle was heard in its stead.

26. Her father gave a sign for stopping the psalmody, and rose to prayer. He was discomposed at first, and his voice faltered as he spoke : but his heart was in his words, and its warmth overcame his embarrassment. He addressed a Being whom he loved, and he spoke for those he loved. His parishioners caught the ardour of the good old man ; even the philosopher felt himself moved, and forgot, for a moment, to think why he should not.

27. *La Roche's* religion was that of sentiment, not theory, and his guest was averse to disputation ; their discourse did not therefore lead to questions concerning the belief of either : yet would the old man sometimes speak of his, from the feelings of a heart impressed with its force, and wishing to spread the pleasure he enjoyed in it. The ideas of his

God and his Saviour were so congenial to his mind, that every emotion of it naturally awakened them. A philosopher might have called him an enthusiast : but if he possessed the fervor of enthusiasts, he was guiltless of their bigotry. "Our Father who art in heaven!" might the good old man say—for he felt it—and all mankind were his brethren.

28. "You regret, my friend," said he to the philosopher, "when my daughter and I talk of the exquisite pleasure derived from music; you regret your want of musical powers and musical feelings; it is a department of soul, you say, which nature has almost denied you, which from the effects you see it have on others, you are sure must be highly delightful. Why should not the same thing be said of religion? Trust me, I feel it in the same way, an energy, an inspiration, which I would not loose for all the blessings of sense, or enjoyments of the world; yet so far from lessening my relish of the pleasures of life, that I feel it heightens them all.

29. "The thought of receiving it from God, adds the blessing of sentiment to that of sensation in every good thing which I possess; and when calamities overtake me, and I have had my share, it confers a dignity on my affliction, and so lifts me above the world. Man, I know is but a worm, yet methinks I am allied to God! It would have been inhuman in our philosopher to cloud, even with a doubt, the sunshine of his belief.

30. His discourse, indeed, was very remote from metaphysical disquisition or religious controversy. Of all men I ever knew, his ordinary conversation was the least tinged with pedantry, or liable to dissertation. With *La Roche* and his daughter it was perfectly familiar.

31. The country round them, the manners of the village, the comparison of both with those of England, remarks on the works of favorite authors, on the sentiments they conveyed and the passions they excited, with many other topics in which there was an equality, or alternate advantage, among the speakers, were the subjects they talked on.

32. Their hours too of riding and walking were many, in which the philosopher, as a stranger, was shown the remarkable scenes and curiosities of the country. They would sometimes make little expeditions to contemplate, in different attitudes, those astonishing mountains, the cliffs of which, covered with eternal snows, and sometimes shooting into frantic shapes, form the termination of most of the Swiss prospects.

33. Our philosopher asked many questions, as to their natural history and productions. *La Roche* observed the sublimity of the ideas which the view of their stupenduous summits, inaccessible to mortal foot, was calculated to inspire, which, said he, naturally leads the mind to that Being by whom their foundations were laid.—“They are not seen in Flanders !” said Mademoiselle with a sigh. “That is an odd remark,” said the philosopher, smiling.—She blushed, and he enquired no farther.*

34. It was with regret he left a society in which he found himself so happy ; but he settled with *La Roche* and his daughter a plan of correspondence ; and they took his promise, that, if ever he came within fifty leagues of their dwelling, he would travel those fifty leagues to visit them.

35. About three years after, our philosopher was on a visit at Geneva ; the promise he made to *La Roche* and his daughter on his former visit, was recalled to his mind, by the view of that range of mountains, on a part of which they had often looked together. There was a reproach too conveyed, along with the recollection, for his having failed to write to either of them for several months past. The truth was that indolence was the habit most natural to him, from which he was not easily roused by the claims of correspondence, either of his friends or his enemies ; when the latter drew their pens in controversy, they were often answered as well as the former.

36. While he was hesitating about a visit to *La Roche*, which he wished to make, but found his effort rather too much for him, he received a letter from the old man, which had been forwarded to him from Paris, where he had then fixed his residence. It contained a gentle complaint of the philosopher's want of punctuality, but an assurance of continued gratitude for his former good offices, and as a friend whom the writer considered interested in his family, it informed him of the approaching nuptials of Mademoiselle *La Roche* with a young man, a relation of her own and formerly a pupil of her father, of the most noble disposition and respectable character.

37. Attached from their earliest years they had been separated by his joining one of the subsidiary regiments of the

* The philosopher was a resident in Flanders and a sceptic. This reproof of his infidelity is inimitably delicate. In short, this whole story is a beautiful satire on deism, bigotry, and metaphysical theology, while it paints unaffected virtue, benevolence, and piety in the most engaging colours.

Canton, then in the service of a foreign power. In this situation, he had distinguished himself as much for courage and military skill, as for the other endowments which he had cultivated at home. The term of his service was now expired, and they expected him to return in a few weeks, when the old man hoped; as he expressed it in his letter, to join their hands and see them happy.

38. Our philosopher felt himself interested in this event; but he was not, perhaps, altogether so happy in the tidings of Mademoiselle *La Roche's* marriage as her father supposed him. Not that he ever was a lover of the lady; but he thought her one of the most amiable women he had seen, and there was something in the idea of her being another's forever, that struck him, he knew not why, like a disappointment. After some little speculation on the matter, however, he could look on it as a thing fitting, if not quite agreeable; and determined on his visit to see his old friend and his daughter happy.

39. On the last day of his journey, different accidents had retarded his progress; he was benighted before he reached the quarter in which *La Roche* resided. His guide however, was well acquainted with the road, and he found himself in view of the lake, which I have before described, in the neighborhood of *La Roche's* dwelling. A light gleamed on the water, that seemed to proceed from the house; it moved slowly along as he proceeded up the side of the lake, and at last he saw it glimmering through the trees, and stooped at some distance from the place where he then was.

40. He supposed it some piece of bridal merriment, and pushed on his horse that he might be a spectator of the scene; but he was a good deal shocked, on approaching the spot, to find it to be the torch of a person clothed in the dress of an attendant on a funeral, and accompanied by several others, who like him, seemed to have been employed in the rights of sepulture.

41. On the philosopher's making enquiry who was the person they had been burying? one of them with an accent more mournful than is common to their profession, answered, "Then you knew not Mademoiselle, Sir! you never beheld a lover." "*La Roche!*" exclaimed he in reply—"alas, it was she indeed!" The appearance of grief and surprise which his countenance assumed, attracted the notice of the peasant with whom he talked.

42. He came up close to the philosopher—"I perceive you are acquainted with Mademoiselle *La Roche*." "Acquainted with her! Good God! when—how—where did she die? Where is her father?" She died, sir, of heart-break, I believe; the young gentleman to whom she was soon to be married, was killed in a duel by a French officer, his intimate companion, and to whom before their quarrel, they had often done the greatest favors."

43. "Her worthy father bears her death, as he has often told us a Christian should; he is even so composed as to be now in his pulpit, ready to deliver a few exhortations to his parishioners, as is the custom with us on such occasions. Follow me, sir and you shall hear him." He followed the man without answering.

44. The Church was dimly lighted, except near the pulpit, where the venerable *La Roche* was seated. His people were now lifting up their voices to that Being whom their pastor had taught them ever to bless and revere. *La Roche* sat, his figure bending gently forward, his eyes half closed, lifted up in silent devotion. A lamp placed near him, threw a light strongly on his head, and marked the shadowy lines of his age across the paleness of his brow, thinly covered with grey hairs.

45. The music ceased—*La Roche* sat for a moment, and nature wrung a few tears from him. His people were loud in their grief. The philosopher was not less affected than they. *La Roche* arose. "Father of mercies," said he, "forgive these tears; assist thy servant to lift up his soul to thee; to lift to thee the souls of thy people! My friends! it is good so to do; at all seasons it is good; but in the days of our distress, what a privilege it is! Well saith the sacred book, "Trust in the Lord; at all times trust in the Lord." When every other support fails us, when the fountains of worldly comfort are dried up, let us then seek those living waters which flow from the throne of God. It is only from the belief of the goodness and wisdom of a Supreme Being, that our calamities can be borne in a manner which becomes a man."

46. "Human wisdom is here of little use; for in proportion as it bestows comfort, it represses feeling, without which we may cease to be hurt by calamity, but we shall also cease to enjoy happiness. I will not bid you be insensible, my friends! I cannot. I feel too much myself, and I am not atham-

ed of my feelings ; but therefore, may I the more willingly be heard ; therefore have I prayed God to give me strength to speak to you ; to direct you to him, not with empty words, but with these tears ; not from speculation, but from experience—that while you see me suffer, you may know also my consolation.

47. “ You behold the mourner of his only child, the last earthly stay and blessing of his declining years ! Such a child too ! it becomes not me to speak of her virtues ; yet it is but grateful to mention them, because they were exerted towards myself. Not many days ago you saw her young, beautiful, virtuous, and happy ; ye who are parents will judge of my affliction now. But I look towards him who struck me ; I see the hand of a father amidst the chastenings of my God.”

48. “ Oh ! could I make you feel what it is to pour out the heart when it is pressed down with many sorrows, to pour it out with confidence to him in whose hands are life and death ; on whose power awaits all that the first enjoys, and in contemplation of whom disappears all that the last can inflict ! For we are not as those who die without hope ; we know that our Redeemer liveth—that we shall live with him, with our friends his servants, in that blessed land where sorrow is unknown, and happiness as endless as it is perfect.”

49. “ Go then, mourn not for me : I have not lost my child : but a little while and we shall meet again, never to be separated. But ye are also my children : Would ye that I should not grieve without comfort ? So live as she lived ; that when your death shall come, it may be the death of the righteous, and your latter end like his.”

50. Such was the exhortation of *La Roche* ; his audience answered with tears. The good old man had dried up his at the altar of the Lord ; his countenance had lost its sadness and assumed the glow of faith and hope. The Philosopher followed him into his house. The inspiration of the pulpit was past ; the scenes they had last met in, rushed again on his mind ; *La Roche* threw his arms around his neck, and watered it with his tears. The other was equally affected ; they went together in silence into the parlour, where the evening service was wont to be performed.

51. The curtains of the organ were open ; *La Roche* started back at the sight.—“ Oh my friend,” said he, and his tears burst forth again. The philosopher had now recollected himself ; he stepped forward and drew the curtain close

—the old man wiped off his tears and taking his friend by the hand, “ You see my weakness,” said he, “ tis the weakness of humanity ; but my comfort is not therefore lost.” “ I heard you,” said the other in the pulpit ; I rejoice that such consolation is yours.” “ It is, my friend,” said he, “ and I trust I shall ever hold it fast ; if there are any who doubt our faith, let them think of what importance religion is to calamity, and forbear to weaken its force ; if they cannot restore our happiness, let them not take away the solace of our affliction.”

52. The philosopher’s heart was smitten : and I have heard him long after confess, that there were moments when the remembrance overcame him even to weakness ; when amidst all the pleasures of philosophical discovery, and the pride of literary fame, he called to his mind the venerable figure of the good *La Roche*, and wished that he had never doubted.



C H A P. XIV.

INNOCENT SIMPLICITY BETRAYED.

Story of Sir EDWARD and LOUISA.

IF we examine impartially that estimate of pleasure, which the higher ranks of society are apt to form, we shall probably be surprised to find how little there is in it, either of natural feeling, or real satisfaction. Many a fashionable voluptuary, who has not totally blunted his taste or his judgement, will own in the intervals of recollection, how often he has suffered from the insipidity or the pain of his enjoyments ; and that if it were not for the fear of being laughed at, it would sometimes be worth while even on the score of pleasure to be virtuous.

2. *Sir Edward*, to whom I had the pleasure of being introduced at Florence, was a character much beyond that which distinguishes the generality of English travellers of fortune. His story was known to some of his countrymen who then resided in Italy ; from one of whom, who could now and then talk of something besides pictures and operas, I had a particular recital of it.

3. He had been first abroad at an early period of life, soon after the death of his father, had left him master of a very large estate, which he had the good fortune to inherit, and all the inclination natural to youth to enjoy. Though

always sumptuous, however, and sometimes profuse he was observed never to be ridiculous in his expenses; and though he was now and then talked of as a man of pleasure and dissipation, he always left behind him more instances of beneficence, than of irregularity.

4. For that respect and esteem in which his character, amidst all his little errors, was generally held, he was supposed a good deal indebted to the society of a gentleman who had been his companion at the university, and now attended him rather as a friend than a tutor. This gentleman was unfortunately seized at Marseilles with a lingering disorder, for which he was under necessity of taking a sea-voyage, leaving Sir *Edward* to prosecute the remaining part of his intended tour alone.

5. Descending into one of the valleys of Piedmont, where notwithstanding the ruggedness of the road, Sir *Edward*, with a prejudice natural to his country, preferred the conveyance of an English hunter to that of an Italian mule, his horse unluckily made a false step, and fell with his rider to the ground, from which Sir *Edward* was lifted by his servants with scarce any signs of life. They conveyed him on a litter to the nearest house, which happened to be the dwelling of a peasant rather above the common rank, before whose door some of his neighbors were assembled at a scene of rural merriment, when the train of Sir *Edward* brought up their master, in the condition I have described.

6. The compassion, natural to his situation, was excited in all; but the owner of the mansion, whose name was *Venoni*, was particularly moved with it. He applied himself immediately to the care of the stranger, and with the assistance of his daughter, who had left the dance she was engaged in, with great marks of agitation, soon restored Sir *Edward* to sense and life.

7. *Venoni* possessed some little skill in surgery, and his daughter produced a book of receipts in medicine. Sir *Edward*, after being blooded, was put to bed and tended with every possible care by his host and his family. A considerable degree of fever was the consequence of his accident; but after some days it abated: and in little more than a week, he was able to join in the society of *Venoni* and his daughter.

8. He could not help expressing some surprise at the appearance of refinement in the conversation of the latter,

much beyond what her situation seemed likely to confer. Her father accounted for it. She had received her education in the house of a lady, who happened to pass through the valley, and to take shelter in *Venoni's* cottage, (for his house was but a better sort of cottage) the night after her birth.

9. "When her mother died," said he, "the Signora, whose name at her desire, we had given the child, took her home to her own house; there she was taught many things of which there is no need here; yet she is not so proud of her learning as to wish to leave her father in his old age; and I hope soon to have her settled near me for life."

10. But Sir *Edward* had now an opportunity of knowing *Louisa* better than from the description of her father. Music and painting, in both which arts she was a tolerable proficient, Sir *Edward* had studied with success. *Louisa* felt a sort of pleasure from her drawings, which they had never given her before, when they were praised by Sir *Edward*; and the family concerts of *Venoni* were very different from what they had formerly been, when once his guest was so far recovered as to be able to join in them. The flute of *Venoni* excelled all the other music of the valley; his daughter's lute was much beyond it; Sir *Edward's* violin was finer than either.

11. But his conversation with *Louisa*—It was that of a superior order of beings! science, taste, sentiment! it was long since *Louisa* had heard these sounds; amidst the ignorance of the valley, it was luxury to hear them; from Sir *Edward*, who was one of the most engaging figures I ever saw, they were doubly delightful. In his countenance there was always an expression animated and interesting; his sickness had overcome somewhat of the first, but greatly added to the power of the latter.

12. *Louisa's* was no less captivating, and Sir *Edward* had not seen it so long without emotion. During his illness, he thought this emotion but gratitude; and, when it first grew warmer he checked it, from the thought of her situation, and of the debt he owed her. But the struggle was too ineffectual to overcome, and of consequence increased his passion.

13. There was but one way in which the pride of Sir *Edward* allowed of its being gratified. He sometimes thought of this as base and unworthy; but he was the fool of words which he had often despised, the slave of manners which he had often condemned. He at last compromised

matters with himself ; he resolved, if he could, to think no more of *Louisa* : at any rate, to think no more of the ties of gratitude or the restraints of virtue.

14. *Louisa*, who trusted to both, now communicated to *Sir Edward* an important secret. It was at the close of a piece of music, which they had been playing in the absence of her father. She took up her lute and touched a little wild melancholy air, which she had composed to the memory of her mother. " That," said she, " no body ever heard except my father ; I play it sometimes when I am alone and in low spirits. I know not how I came to think of it now ; yet I have some reason to be sad."

15. *Sir Edward* pressed to know the cause ; after some hesitation she told it all. Her father had fixed on the son of a neighbor, rich in possessions, but rude in manners, for her husband. Against this match she had always protested as strongly, as a sense of duty, and the mildness of her nature would allow ; but *Venoni* was obstinately bent on the match, and she was wretched from the thoughts of it. " To marry where one cannot love—to marry such a man, *Sir Edward* !" It was an opportunity beyond his power of resistance. *Sir Edward* pressed her hand ; said it would be profanation to think of such a marriage ; praised her beauty, extolled her virtues ; and concluded by swearing that he adored her.

16. She heard him with unsuspecting pleasure, which her blushes could ill conceal. *Sir Edward* improved the favorable moment ; talked of the ardency of his passion, the insignificance of ceremonies and forms, the inefficacy of legal engagements, the eternal duration of those dictated by love ; and in fine, urged her going off with him, to crown both their days with happiness. *Louisa* started at the proposal. She would have reproached him, but her heart was not made for it ; she could only weep.

17. They were interrupted by the arrival of her father with his intended son-in-law. He was just such a man as *Louisa* had represented him, coarse, vulgar, and ignorant. But *Venoni*, tho much above their neighbor in every thing but riches, looked on him as poorer men often look on the wealthy, and discovered none of his imperfections. He took his daughter aside, told her he had brought her future husband, and that he intended they should be married in a week at farthest.

18. Next morning *Louisa* was indisposed, and kept her

chamber. Sir *Edward* was now perfectly recovered. He was engaged to go out with *Venoni*; but before his departure, he took up his violin and touched a few plaintive notes on it. They were heard by *Louisa*.

19. In the evening she wandered forth to indulge her sorrows alone. She had reached a sequestered spot where some poplars formed a thicket, on the banks of a little stream that watered the valley. A nightingale was perched on one of them, and had already begun his accustomed song. *Louisa* sat down on a withered stump, leaning her cheek upon her hand.

20. After a little while, the bird was scared from its perch and flitted from the thicket. *Louisa* rose from the ground and burst into tears. She turned and beheld Sir *Edward*. His countenance had much of its former languor; and when he took her hand, he cast on the earth a melancholy look, and seemed unable to speak his feelings.

21. "Are you not well, Sir *Edward*?" said *Louisa*, with a voice faint and broken. "I am ill indeed," said he, but my illness is of the mind. *Louisa* cannot cure me of that. I am wretched, but I deserve to be so. I have broken every law of hospitality, and every obligation of gratitude. I have dared to wish for happiness and to speak what I wished, though it wounded the heart of my dearest benefactor—but I will make a severe expiation.

22. "This moment I leave you, *Louisa*! I go to be wretched; but you may be happy; happy in your duty to a father; happy it may be in the arms of a husband, whom the possession of such a wife may teach refinement and sensibility. I go to my native country, to hurry through scenes of irksome business or tasteless amusements; that I may if possible procure a sort of half-oblivion of that happiness which I left behind, a listless endurance of that life which I once dreamed might be made delightful with *Louisa*."

23. Tears were the only answer she could give. Sir *Edward*'s servants appeared, with a carriage, ready for his departure. He took from his pocket two pictures; one he had drawn of *Louisa*, he fastened round his neck, and kissing it with rapture, hid it in his bosom. The other he held out in a hesitating manner. "This," said he, "if *Louisa* will accept of it, may sometimes put her in mind of him who once offended, who can never cease to adore her. She may look on it, perhaps, after the original is no more; when this heart shall have forgot to love, and cease to be wretched."

24. *Louisa* was at last overcome. Her face was first pale as death ; then suddenly it was crossed with a crimson blush. " Oh ! Sir *Edward* ! " said she, " what—what would you have me do ? " He eagerly seized her hand, and led her, reluctant to the carriage. They entered it, and driving off with furious speed, were soon out of sight of those hills which pastured the flocks of the unfortunate *Venoni*.

25. The virtue of *Louisa* was vanquished : but her sense of virtue was not overcome. Neither the vows of eternal fidelity of her seducer, nor the constant and respectful attention, which he paid her, during a hurried journey to England, could allay that anguish which she suffered at the recollection of her past, and the thoughts of her present situation. Sir *Edward*, felt strongly the power of her beauty and of her grief. His heart was not made for that part which, it is probable, he thought he could have performed ; it was still subject to remorse, to compassion, and to love.

26. These emotions perhaps, he might soon have overcome, had they been met by vulgar violence or reproaches ; but the quiet and upbraiding sorrows of *Louisa* nourished those feelings of tenderness and attachment. She never mentioned her wrongs in words ; sometimes a few starting tears would speak them ; and when time had given her a little more composure, her lute discoursed melancholy music.

27. On their arrival in England, Sir *Edward* carried *Louisa* to his seat in the country. There she was treated with all the observance of a wife ; and, had she chosen it, might have commanded more than the ordinary splendor of one. But she would not allow the indulgence of Sir *Edward* to blazen with equipage and show, that state which she wished always to hide, and, if possible, to forget. Her books and her music were her only pleasures ; if pleasures they could be called, that served but to alleviate misery, and to blunt for a while, the pangs of contrition.

28. These were deeply aggravated by the recollection of her father ; a father left in his age to feel his own misfortunes and his daughter's disgrace. Sir *Edward* was too generous not to think of providing for *Venoni*. He meant to make some atonement for the injury he had done him, by that cruel bounty which is reparation only to the base, but to the honest, is insult. He had not however, an opportunity of accomplishing his purpose.

29. He learned that *Venoni*, soon after his daughter's elopement, removed from his former place of residence, and as his neighbors had reported, had died in one of the villages of Savoy. His daughter felt this with anguish the most poignant, and her afflictions, for a while, refused consolation. Sir *Edward's* whole tenderness and attention were called forth to mitigate her grief; and after its first transports had subsided, he carried her to London, in hopes that objects new to her, and commonly attractive to all, might contribute to remove it.

30. With a man possessed of feelings like Sir *Edward's* the affliction of *Louisa* gave a certain respect to his attentions. He hired her a house separate from his own, and treated her with all the delicacy of the purest attachment. But his solicitude to comfort and amuse her, was not attended with success. She felt all the horrors of that guilt, which she now considered as not only the ruin of herself, but the murderer of her father.

31. In London Sir *Edward* found his sister, who had married a man of great fortune and high fashion. He had married her, because she was a fine woman, and admired by fine men: she had married him, because he was the wealthiest of her suitors. They lived, as is common to people in such a situation, necessitous with a princely revenue, and very wretched amidst perpetual gaiety.

32. This scene was so foreign from the idea Sir *Edward* had formed of the reception which his country and his friends were to afford him, that he found a constant source of disgust in the society of his equals. In their conversation, fantastic, not refined, their ideas were frivolous, and their knowledge shallow: and with all the pride of birth and insolence of station, their principles were mean, and their minds ignoble. In their pretended attachments, he discovered only signs of selfishness; and their pleasures, he experienced, were as fallacious as their friendships.

33. In the society of *Louisa* he found sensibility and truth; hers was the only heart that seemed interested in his welfare: she saw the return of virtue in Sir *Edward*, and felt the friendship which he shewed her. Sometimes when she perceived him sorrowful, her lute would leave its melancholy for more lively airs, and her countenance assumed a gaiety it was not formed to wear. But her heart was breaking with that anguish which her generosity endeavored to conceal from him; her frame, too delicate for the struggle of

her feelings, seemed to yield to their force; the colour faded in her cheek, the lustre of her eyes grew dim.

34. Sir *Edward* saw these symptoms of decay with the deepest remorse. Often did he curse those false ideas of pleasure, which had led him to consider the ruin of an artless girl, who loved and trusted him, as an object which it was luxury to attain. Often did he wish to blot out from his life a few guilty months, to be again restored to an opportunity of giving happiness to that family, whose unsuspecting kindness he had repaid with the treachery of a robber, and the cruelty of an assassin.

35. One evening while he sat in a little parlour with *Louisa*, his mind alternately agitated and softened with this impression, a *band organ* of a remarkable sweet tone, was heard in the street: *Louisa* laid aside her lute and listened: the airs it played were those of her native country; and a few tears which she endeavored to hide, stole from her on hearing them. Sir *Edward* ordered a servant to fetch the organist into the room: he was brought in accordingly, and seated at the door of the apartment.

36. He played one or two sprightly tunes, to which *Louisa* had often danced in her infancy; she gave herself up to the recollection, and her tears flowed without controul. Suddenly the musician changing the stop, introduced a little melancholy air of a wild and plaintive kind. *Louisa* started from her seat and rushed up to the stranger.—He threw off a tattered and black patch. It was her father! she would have sprung to embrace him; he turned aside for a few moments, and would not receive her into his arms. But nature at last overcame his resentment; he burst into tears, and pressed to his bosom his long-lost daughter.

37. Sir *Edward* stood fixed in astonishment and confusion. "I came not to upbraid you," said *Venoni*; "I am a poor, weak, old man, unable for upbraidings; I am come but to find my child, to forgive her, and to die! When you saw us first, Sir *Edward*, we were not thus. You found us virtuous and happy: we danced and we sung, and there was not a sad heart in the valley where we dwelt. Yet we left our dancing, our songs and our cheerfulness: you were distressed and we pitied you."

38. "Since that day the pipe has never been heard in *Venoni's* fields; grief and sickness have brought him almost to the grave; and his neighbors who loved and pitied him

have been cheerful no more. Yet methinks though you robbed *us* of happiness, *you* are not happy : else why that dejected look, which, amidst all the grandeur around you, I saw you wear, and those tears, which under all the gaudiness of her apparel, I saw that poor deluded girl shed ?”

39. “ But she shall shed no more,” cried Sir *Edward* ; “ you shall be happy, and I will be just. Forgive, my venerable friend, the injuries I have done you ; forgive me, my *Louisa*, for rating your excellence at a price so mean. I have seen those high-born females to which my rank might have allied me ; I am ashamed of their vices, and sick of their follies. Profligate in their hearts amidst affected purity, they are slaves to pleasure, without the sincerity of passion ; and with the name of honour, are insensible to the feelings of virtue.”

40. “ You my *Louisa* !—but I will not call up recollections that might render me less worthy of your future esteem—Continue to love your *Edward* but a few hours, and you shall add the title to the affections of a wife ; let the care and tenderness of a husband bring back its peace to your mind, and its bloom to your cheek. We will leave for a while the wonder and envy of the fashionable circle here. We will restore your father to his native home ; under that roof I shall once more be happy : happy without alloy ; because I shall deserve my happiness. Again shall the pipe and the dance gladden the valley, and innocence and peace beam on the cottage of *Venoni*.



C H A P. XV.

EMILIUS, or Domestic Happiness.

THE government of a family depends on such various and opposite principles, that it is a matter of extreme delicacy. Perhaps there is no situation in life in which it is so difficult to behave with propriety, as in the contest between parental authority and parental love. This is, undoubtedly, the reason why we see so few happy families. Few parents are both loved and respected, because most of them are either the dupes or the tyrants of their children.

2. Some parents, either from a natural weakness of mind, or an excess of fondness, permit, and even encourage their children in a thousand familiarities, which render them ridiculous, and by diminishing the respect which is due to

their age and station destroy all their authority. Others, ruled by a partial and blind affection, which can deny nothing to its object, indulge their children in all their romantic wishes, however trifling and foolish; however degrading to their dignity or injurious to their welfare. Others, soured by misfortunes, or grown peevish and jealous by the loss of youthful pleasures, and an acquaintance with the deceit and folly of the world, attempt to restrain the ideas and enjoyments of youth by the rigid maxims of age.

3. The children of the first class often offend by silly manners and a kind of good natured disrespect. Those of the second are generally proud, whimsical and vicious. Those of the third, if they are subdued, when young, by the rigour of parental discipline, forever remain morose, illiberal and unf sociable; or if as it commonly happens, they find means to escape from restraint, they abandon themselves to every species of licentiousness. To parents of these descriptions may be added another class, whose fondness blinds their eyes to the most glaring vices of their children; or invents such palliations as to prevent the most salutary corrections.

4. The taste for amusements in young people, is the most difficult to regulate by the maxims of prudence. In this article, parents are apt to err, either by extreme indulgence on one hand, or immoderate rigor on the other. Recollecting the feelings of their youth, they give unbounded licence to the inclinations of their children; or having lost all relish for amusements, they refuse to gratify their most moderate desires.

5. It is a maxim which universally holds true, that the best method of guarding youth from *criminal* pleasures, is to indulge them freely in those that are *innocent*. A person who has free access to reputable society, will have little inclination to frequent that which is vicious. But those who are kept under constant restraint, who are seldom in amusements, who are perpetually awed by the frowns of parent, or soured by a disappointment of their most harmless wishes, will at times break over all bounds to gratify their taste for pleasure, and will not be anxious to discriminate between the innocent and the criminal.

6. Nothing contributes more to keep youth within the limits of decorum, than to have their superiors mingle in their company, at proper times, and participate of their a-

amusements. This condescension flatters their pride ; at the same time, that respect for age, which no familiarities can wholly efface, naturally checks the extravagant sallies of mirth, and the indelicate rudenesses which young people are apt to indulge in their jovial hours.

7. That awful distance at which some parents keep their children, and their abhorrence of all juvenile diversions, which compel youth to sacrifice their most innocent desires, or veil the gratification of them with the most anxious secrecy, have as direct a tendency to drive young persons into a profligate life, as the force of vicious example. It is impossible to give to the age of *twenty* the feelings or the knowledge of *sixty* ; as it would be folly to wish to clothe a child with grey hairs, or to stamp the fading aspect of Autumn on the bloom of May. Nature has given to every age some peculiar passions and appetites ; to moderate and refine these, not to trifle and destroy, is the business of common prudence and parental care.

8. I was led into this train of reflections by an acquaintance with the family of Emilius, which is a rare instance of domestic felicity. Parents indulgent to their children, hospitable to their friends, and universally respected : their sons equally generous, modest and manly ; Emilia, an only daughter, the pride of her parents, possessed of every accomplishment that can honor herself or endear her to her friends ; an easy fortune, and a disposition to enjoy and improve it for the purposes of humanity ; perfect harmony in domestic life, and unaffected satisfaction in the pleasures of society : such is the family of Emilius.

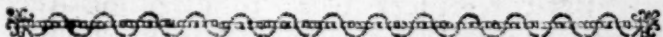
9. Such a family is a little paradise on earth ; to envy their happiness is almost a virtue. Conjugal respect, parental tenderness, filial obedience, and brotherly kindness are so seldom united, in a family, that when I am honored with the friendship of such, I am equally ambitious to participate their happiness and profit by the example.

10. Emilia's situation must be peculiarly agreeable. Her parents delight to gratify her in every amusement ; and contented with this, she knows no wish beyond the sacred bounds of honor. While by their indulgence she enjoys every rational pleasure, she rewards their generous care, by a dutiful behaviour and unblemished manners.

11. By thus discharging the reciprocal duties of their respective stations, the happiness of each is secured. The soli-

itude of the parent and the obedience of the child, equally contribute to the bliss of the little society ; the one calling forth every act of tenderness, and the other displayed in all the filial virtues.

12. Few families are destined to be so happy as that of Emilius. Were I to choose the situation where I could pass my life with most satisfaction, it would be in this domestic circle. My house would then be the residence of delight, unmingled with the anxieties of ambition or the regret of disappointment. Every act would be dictated by love and respect ; every countenance would wear the smile of complaisance ; and the little unavoidable troubles, incident to the happiest situation, would only serve to increase our friendship and improve our felicity, by making room for the exercise of virtue.



C H A P. XVI.

EMILIA, or the Happiness of Retirement.

AS I was conversing with Emilia, a few days past, I asked whether she was contented to live so remote from the resort of company. She answered in the affirmative, and remarked further, that her situation enabled her to distinguish between *real* friends and *complimentary*: for if she lived in a more public place, she might be visited by crowds of people, who were civil indeed, but had no motive for calling on her, but to spend an idle hour, and gaze on the busy multitude.

2. I was pleased with the remark, and was naturally led to consider such a retired situation as a fortunate circumstance for a young lady of delicacy. Not only the happiness of a family, but the character of young women, both in a moral and social view, depends on a choice of proper company. A perpetual throng of company, especially if it furnishes a variety of new objects, has a pernicious effect on the dispositions of female minds.

3. Women are destined by nature to preside over domestic affairs. Whatever parade they make abroad, their *real* merit and *real* characters are known only at home. The behavior of servants, the neatness of furniture, the order of a table, and the regularity of domestic business, are decisive evidences of female worth. Perhaps sweetness of temper does not contribute more to the happiness of their partners and their families, than a proper attention to these articles.

4. For this reason, whatever has a tendency to divert the mind from these concerns, and give them a turn for empty show, endless noise, and tasteless amusements, ought to be carefully avoided by young ladies who wish for respect beyond the present moment. Misses, who are perpetually surrounded with idle company, or even live in sight of it, though they may be fortunate enough to preserve their innocence, are still in hazard of contracting such a fondness for dissipation and folly, as to unfit them for the superintendence of a family.

5. Another danger to which young women, possessed of personal charms, are exposed in public places, is, the flattery and admiration of men. The good opinion of a fop will hardly flatter a woman of discernment; much less his ordinary compliments, which are commonly without meaning. But the heart is often so disguised, that it is difficult at first to distinguish between a coxcomb and a man of worth; or if it is easy for an accurate observer, yet there is great danger that vanity and inexperience will make young ladies overlook the distinction.

6. Few minds are effectually secured against the attacks of flattery. It is a poison the more fatal, as it seizes human nature in its weakest part. In youth, when the passions are in full vigor and the judgement feeble, female minds are peculiarly liable to be corrupted by the contagious influence of pretty civilities and affected admiration.

7. With whatever scruples they may at first listen to the praises that are bestowed on their real or pretended charms, a constant strain of flattering addresses, accompanied with obsequious complaisance, seldom fails of giving them too high an opinion of themselves. They are insensibly led to believe, that they are possessed of virtues to which they are really strangers. This belief satisfies them without attempting any further improvement; and makes them to depend for reputation in life, on good qualities, the fancied existence of which begins and ends with the falsehood of customary compliments.

8. Such ladies, before marriage, are usually vain, pert, affected and silly; and after marriage, haughty, disappointed and peevish. The most perfect beauty must fade, and cease to command admiration; but in most instances, the nuptial hour puts a period to that excess of flattering attention, which is the happiness of giddy females. The longest term of admiration must be short: That which depends solely on personal attractions, is often momentary,

9. The more flattery is bestowed upon young ladies, the less, in general, are they solicitous to acquire virtues which shall ensure respect when admiration shall cease. The more they are praised in youth the more they expect it in advanced life, when they have less charms to command it. Thus the excessive complaisance of admirers, which is extremely pleasing at *sixteen*, proves at *forty*, a source of mortification and discontent.

10. I would by no means insinuate that young ladies, ought to be kept total strangers to company, and to rational professions of esteem. It is in company only that they can acquaint themselves with mankind, acquire an easy address, and learn numberless little decorums, which are essential and cannot be taught by precept. Without these, a woman will sometimes deviate from that dignity and propriety of conduct, which, in any situation will secure the good will of her friends, and prevent the blushes of her husband.

11. A fondness for company and amusement is blameable only when it is indulged to excess, and permitted to absorb more important concerns. Nor is some degree of flattery always dangerous or useless. The good opinion of mankind we are all desirous to obtain; and to know that we possess it, often makes us ambitious to deserve it.

12. No passion is given to us in vain; the best ends are sometimes effected by the worst means; and even female vanity, properly managed, may prompt to the most meritorious actions.

13. I should pay Emilia but a very ill compliment to ascribe her virtues to her local situation; for no person can claim as a virtue what she has been in no danger of losing. But there is no retirement beyond the reach of temptation, and the whole tenor of her conduct proves, that her unblemished morals and uniform delicacy, proceed from better principles than necessity or accident.

14. She is loved and flattered, but she is not vain; her company is universally coveted, and yet she has no airs of haughtiness and disdain. Her cheerfulness in company shows that she has a relish for society; her contentment at home and attention to domestic concerns, are early specimens of her happy disposition; and her decent, unaffected abhorrence of every species of licentious behavior, evinces, beyond suspicion, that the innocence of her heart is equal to the charms of her person.

C H A P. XVII.

JULIANA. *A real Character.*

JULIANA is one of those rare women whose personal attractions have no rivals, but the sweetness of her temper and the delicacy of her sentiments. An elegant person, regular features, a fine complexion, a lively expressive countenance, an easy address, and those blushes of modesty that soften the soul of the beholder: these are her native beauties, which render her the object of universal admiration. But when we converse with her, and hear the melting expressions of unaffected sensibility and virtue that flow from her tongue, her personal charms receive new luster, and irresistably engage the affections of her acquaintances.

2. Sensible that the great source of all happiness, is purity of morals and an easy conscience, Juliana pays constant and sincere attention to the duties of religion. She abhors the infamous, but fashionable vice of deriding the sacred institutions of religion. She considers a lady without virtue as a monster on earth; and every accomplishment, without morals, as polite deception. She is neither a hypocrite nor an enthusiast: on the contrary, she mingles such cheerfulness with the religious duties of life, that even her piety carries with it a charm, which insensibly allures the profligate from the arms of vice.

3. Not only the general tenor of her life, but in particular her behaviour in church, evinces the reality of her religion. She esteems it not only criminal in a high degree, but extremely unpolite, to behave with levity in a place consecrated to the solemn purposes of devotion. She cannot believe that any person, who is solicitous to treat all mankind with civility, can laugh in the temple of Jehovah, and treat their great benefactor with heedless neglect.

4. In polite life, the manners of Juliana are peculiarly engaging. To her superiors, she shows the utmost deference and respect; to her equals, the most modest complaisance and civility; while every rank, experience her kindness and affability. By this conduct she secures the love and friendship of all degrees. No person can despise her, for she does nothing that is ridiculous: she cannot be hated, for she does injury to none; and even the malevolent whispers of envy are silenced by her modest deportment and generous condescension.

5. Her conversation is lively and sentimental; free from

false wit, frivolous minuteness, and affectation of learning.

Altho' her discourse is always under the direction of prudence, yet it appears unstudied ? for her good sense always furnishes her with thoughts suited to the subject, and the purity of her mind renders any caution in expressing them almost unnecessary. She will not lead the conversation ; much less can she stun the ears of company with perpetual chat, to interrupt the discourse of others. But when occasion offers, she acquires herself with ease and grace ; without the airs of pertness or the confusion of bashfulness.

6. But if the conversation happens to turn upon the foibles of either sex, Juliana discovers her goodness by silence, or by inventing palliations. She detests every species of slander. She is sensible that to publish and aggravate human errors, is not the way to correct them ; and reformation, rather than infamy, is the wish and the study of her life. Her own amiable example is the severest of all satires upon the faults and the follies of her sex, and goes farther in discountenancing both, than all the censures of malicious detraction.

7. Altho' Juliana possesses every accomplishment that can command esteem and admiration ; yet she has neither vanity nor ostentation. Her merit is easily discovered without show and parade. She considers, that haughtiness and contempt of others, always proceed from meanness ; that true greatness is ever accessible ; and that self recommendation and blustering pretensions, are but the glittering decorations of empty heads and trifling hearts.

8. However strong may be her desire of useful information, or however lively her curiosity, yet she restrains these passions within the bounds of prudence and good breeding. She deems it impertinent to the highest degree, to be prying into the concerns of other people ; much more impertinent and criminal does she deem it, to indulge an officious inquisitiveness, for the sake of gratifying private spleen in the propagation of unfavorable truths. So exceedingly delicate is she in her treatment of her fellow creatures, that she will not read a paper nor hear a whisper, which a person does not wish to have known, even when she is in no danger of detection.

9. The same delicate attention to the feelings of others regulates her conduct in company. She would not, for the price of her reputation, be found laughing or whispering with one in the company. All nods, grimaces, sly looks,

and half speeches, the cause of which is not known, are carefully avoided by her, and reprobated as the height of ill breeding, and the grossest insult to the company. Whenever this happens between two persons, the rest of the company have a just right to consider themselves the object of their ridicule. But it is a maxim of Juliana, that such conduct is a breach of politeness, which, no oddities or mistakes that happen in public company, can excuse or palliate.

10. It is very common for persons, who are destitute of certain accomplishments which they admire in other people, to endeavour to imitate them. This is the source of affectation, a fault that infallibly exposes a person to ridicule. But the ornaments of the heart, the dress and the manners of Juliana, are equally easy and natural. She need not to assume the *appearance* of good qualities which she possesses in *reality*; nature has given too many beauties to her person, to require the studied embellishments of fashion, and such are the ease and gracefulness of her behaviour, that any attempt to improve them, would lessen the dignity of her manners.

11. She is equally a stranger to that supercilious importance which affects to despise the small, but necessary concerns of life; and that squeamish false delicacy which is wounded with every trifle. She will not neglect a servant in sickness because of the meanness of his employment; she will not abuse an animal for her own pleasure and amusement; nor will she go into fits at the distress of a favorite cat.

12. Her gentle soul is never disturbed with discontent, envy, or resentment: those turbulent passions which so often destroy the peace of society as well as of individuals. The native firmness and serenity of her mind forbid the intrusion of violent emotions; at the same time her heart, susceptible and kind, is the soft residence of every virtuous affection. She sustains the unavoidable shocks of adversity, with a calmness that indicates the superiority of her soul; and with the smile of joy or the tear of tenderness, she participates the pleasures or the sorrows of a friend.

13. But the discretion and generosity of Juliana, are particularly distinguished by the number and sincerity of her attachments. Her friendships are few, but they are all founded on the principles of benevolence and fidelity. Such confidence do her sincerity, her constancy and her faithfulness inspire, that her friends commit to her breast, their most pri-

vate concerns, without reserve, and without suspicion. It is her favorite maxim, that a necessity of exacting promises of secrecy, is a burlesque upon every pretension to friendship. Such is the character of the young, the amiable Juliana. If it is possible for her to find a man who knows her worth and has a disposition and virtues to reward it, the union of their hearts must secure that unmingled felicity in life, which is reserved for genuine love, a passion inspired by sensibility, and improved by a perpetual intercourse of kind offices.

C H A P. XVIII.

RULES for BEHAVIOR.

NEVER let your mind be absent in company. Command and direct your attention to the present object, and let distant objects be banished from the mind. There is time enough for every thing in the course of the day, if you do but one thing at once; but there is not time enough in the year, if you will do two things at a time.

Never attempt to tell a story with which you are not well acquainted; nor fatigue your hearers with relating little trifling circumstances. Do not interrupt the thread of discourse with a thousand *bems*, and by repeating often, *says he* and *said I*. Relate the principal points with clearness and precision, and you will be heard with pleasure.

There is a difference between modesty and bashfulness. Modesty is the characteristic of an amiable mind; bashfulness discovers a degree of meanness. Nothing sinks a young man into low company so surely as bashfulness. If he *thinks* he shall not please, he most surely *will* not. Vice and ignorance are the only things we ought to be ashamed of; while we keep clear of them we may venture any where without fear or concern.

Frequent good company—copy their manners—imitate their virtues and accomplishments.

Be not very free in your remarks upon characters. There may be, in all companies, more *wrong* heads than *right* ones—more people who *deserve*, than who will *bear* censure.

Never hold any body by the button or the hand, in order to be heard through your story; for if people are not willing to hear you, you had much better hold your *tongue* than hold *them*.

Never whisper in company. Conversation is common stock, in which all persons present have a right to claim their share.

Always listen when you are spoken to ; and never interrupt a speaker.

Be not forward in leading the conversation—this belongs to the oldest persons in company. Display your learning only on particular occasions. Never oppose the opinion of another, but with great modesty.

On all occasions avoid speaking of yourself, if it is possible. Nothing that we can say ourselves will varnish our *defects*, or add lustre to our *virtues* ; but on the contrary, it will often make the former *more visible*, and the latter *obscure*.

Be frank, open, and ingenuous in your behavior ; and always look people in the face when you speak to them.

Never receive nor retail scandal. In scandal, as in robbery, the receiver is as bad as the thief.

Never reflect upon bodies of men, either clergymen, lawyers, physicians, or soldiers ; nor upon nations and societies. There are good, as well as bad, in all orders of men, in all countries.

Mimicry is a common and favorite amusement of low minds, but should be despised by all great ones. We should neither practice it ourselves, nor praise it in others.

Let your expenses be less than your income.

A *fool* squanders away, without credit or advantage to himself, more than a *man of sense* spends with both. A wise man employs his money, as he does his time—he never spends a shilling of the one, nor a minute of the other, but in something that is either useful, or rationally pleasing. The fool buys what he does *not* want, but does *not* pay for what he stands in need.

Form no friendships hastily. Study a character well before you put confidence in the person. *Every* person is entitled to *civility*, but very *few*, to *confidence*. The Spanish proverb says, “ Tell me whom you live with, and I will tell you who you are.” The English say, “ A man is known by the company he keeps.”

Good breeding does not consist in low bows, and formal ceremony ; but in an easy, civil, and respectful behavior.

A well-bred man is polite to every person, but particularly to strangers. In mixed companies every person who is admitted, is supposed to be on a footing of equality with the rest, and consequently claims very justly every mark of civility.

Be very attentive to neatness. The hands, nails, and

teeth, should be kept clean. A dirty mouth is not only disagreeable, as it occasions an offensive breath, but almost infallibly causes a decay, and loss of teeth.

Never put your fingers in your nose or ears—it is a nasty, vulgar rudeness, and an affront to company.

Be not a sloven in dress; nor a fop. Let your dress be neat, and as fashionable as your circumstances and convenience will admit. It is said, that a man who is negligent at twenty years of age, will be a sloven at forty, and intolerable at fifty.

It is *necessary* sometimes to be in *haste*; but always *wrong* to be in a *hurry*. A man in a hurry perplexes himself; he wants to do every thing at once, and does nothing at all.

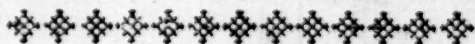
Frequent and loud laughter, is the characteristic of folly and ill manners—it is the manner in which silly people express their joy at silly things.

Humming a tune within yourself, drumming with your fingers, making a noise with the feet, whistling, and such awkward habits, are all breaches of good manners, and indications of contempt for the persons present.

When you meet people in the street or in a public place, never stare them full in the face.

When you are in company with a stranger, never begin to question him about his name, his place of residence, and his business. This impertinent curiosity is the height of ill manners. Some persons apologize in a good-natured manner, for their inquisitiveness, by an, “If I may be so bold;” “If I may take the liberty;” or “Pray, Sir, excuse my freedom.” These attempts to excuse one’s self, imply, that a man thinks *himself* an impudent fellow—and if he does not, other people think he is, and treat him as such.

Above all, adhere to morals and religion, with immovable firmness. Whatever effect, outward show and accomplishments may have, in recommending a man to *others*, none but the *good* is really happy in *himself*.



C H A P. XIX.

FAMILY DISAGREEMENTS *the frequent cause of* IMMORAL CONDUCT.

AFTER all our complaints of the uncertainty of human affairs, it is undoubtedly true, that more misery

is produced among us by the irregularities of our tempers, than by real misfortune.

And it is a circumstance particularly unhappy, that these irregularities of the temper are most apt to display themselves at our fire sides, where every thing ought to be tranquil and serene. But the truth is, we are awed by the presence of strangers, and are afraid of appearing weak and ill-natured, when we act in the sight of the world; and so, very heroically, reserve all our ill-humor for our wives, children, and servants. We are meek, where we might meet with opposition; but feel ourselves undauntedly bold where we are sure of no effectual resistance.

The perversion of the *best* things converts them to the *worst*. Home is certainly well adapted to repose and solid enjoyment. Among parents and brothers, and all the tender charities of private life, the gentler affections, which are always attended with feelings purely and permanently pleasurable, find an ample scope for proper exertion. The experienced have often declared, after wearying themselves in pursuing phantoms, that they have found a substantial happiness in the domestic circle. Hither they have returned from their wild excursions in the regions of dissipation, as the bird, after fluttering in the air, descends into her nest, to partake and to increase its genial warmth with her young ones.

Such and so sweet are the comforts of home, when not perverted by the folly and weakness of man. Indifference, and a carelessness on the subject of pleasing those whom it is our best interest to please, often render it a scene of dullness and insipidity. Happy if the evil extended no farther. But the transition from the negative state of not being pleased, to positive ill-humor, is but too easy. Fretfulness and peevishness arise, as nettles vegetate, spontaneously, where no salutary plants are cultivated. One unkind expression infallibly generates many others. Trifles, light as air, are able to kindle the blaze of contention. By frequent conflicts and unreserved familiarity, all that mutual respect which is necessary to preserve love, even in the most intimate connections, is entirely lost; and the faint affection which remains, is too feeble, to be felt amid the furious operation of the hateful passions. Farewel peace and tranquility, and cheerful converse, and all the boasted comforts of the family circle. The nest which should preserve a perpetual warmth by the constancy of paternal and

conjugal affection, is rendered cold and joyless. In the place of the soft down which should cover it, are substituted thorns and briars. The waters of strife, to make use of the beautiful allusion of scripture, rush in with impetuous violence, and ruffle and discolor that stream, which in its natural and undisturbed current, devolves its waters all smoothe and limpid.

But it is not necessary to expatiate on the misery of family dissention. I mean more particularly to suggest, that family dissention, besides all its own immediate evils, is the parent of moral misconduct.

When the several parts, which compose a family, find themselves uneasy in that home which is naturally the seat of mutual enjoyment, they are tempted from the straight road of common prudence, to pursue their happiness through a devious wild of passion and imagination. The son, arrived at years of maturity, who is treated harshly at home, will seldom spend his evenings at the domestic fire side. If he lives in the city, he will fly for refuge to company, and in the end, it is very probable, he will form some unhappy connexion which cannot be continued without a plentiful supply of money. Money, it is probable, cannot be procured. What then remains, but to pursue those methods which unprincipled ingenuity has invented, and which, sooner or later, lead to their proper punishments, pain, shame and death!

But tho the consequences are not always such as the operation of human laws produces, yet they are always terrible, and destructive of happiness and virtue. Misery is indeed the necessary result of all deviation from rectitude; but early debauchery, early disease, early profligacy of all kinds, are peculiarly fruitful of wretchedness, as they sow the seeds of misery in the spring of life, when all that is sown strikes deep root, and buds and blossoms, and brings forth fruit in profuse abundance.

In the disagreements between children and parents, it is certain that the children are usually most culpable. Their violent passions and defective experience, render them disobedient and undutiful. Their love of pleasure operates so violently as often to destroy the force of filial affection. A parent is stung to the heart by the ingratitude of a child. He checks his precipitancy, and perhaps with too little command of temper: for who can always hold the reins? Asperity produces asperity. But the child was the ag-

gression, and therefore deserves a great part of the misery which ensues. It is, however, certain, that the parent is often imprudent, as well as the child undutiful. He should endeavor to render home agreeable, by gentleness and reasonable indulgence : for man at every age seeks to be pleased, but more particularly at the juvenile age. He should indeed maintain his authority ; but it should be like the mild dominion of a limited monarch, and not the iron rule of an austere tyrant. If home is rendered pleasing, it will not be long deserted. The prodigal will soon return, when his father's house is always ready to receive him with joy.

What is said of the consequences of domestic disunion to sons, is equally to be applied to daughters. Indeed, as the misconduct of daughters is more fatal to family peace, though perhaps not more heinous in a moral view, particular care should be taken to render them attached to the comforts of the family circle. When their home is disagreeable, they will be ready to make any exchange ; and will often loose their characters, virtue and happiness, in the pursuit of it. Indeed the female character and happiness are so easily injured, that no solicitude can be too great in their preservation. But prudence is necessary in every good cause as well as zeal ; and it is found by experience, that the gentlest method of government, if it is limited and directed by good sense, is the best. It ought indeed to be steady, but not rigid ; and every pleasure which is innocent in itself, and in its consequences, ought to be admitted, with a view to render less disagreeable that unwinking vigilance, which a delicate and sensible parent will judge necessary to be used in the care of a daughter.

To what wickedness, as well as wretchedness, matrimonial disagreements lead, every day's history will clearly inform us. When the husband is driven from his home by a termagant, he will seek enjoyment, which is denied him at home, in the haunts of vice, and in the riots of intemperance. Nor can female corruption be wondered at, though it must be greatly pitied and regretted, when in the heart of a husband, which love and friendship should warm, hatred is found to rankle. Conjugal infelicity not only renders life most uncomfortable, but leads to that desperate dissoluteness and carelessness in manners, which terminates in the ruin of health, peace and fortune.

But it avails little to point out evils without recommend-

ing a remedy. One of the first rules which suggests itself, is, that families should endeavor, by often and seriously reflecting on the subject, to convince themselves, that not only the enjoyment, but the virtue of every individual, greatly depends on a cordial union. When they are convinced of this, they will endeavor to promote it; and it fortunately happens, that the very wish and attempt of every individual must infallibly secure success. It may, indeed, be difficult to restrain the occasional sallies of temper; but where there is, in the more dispassionate moments, a settled desire to preserve domestic union, the transient violence of passion will not often produce a permanent rupture.

It is another most excellent rule, to avoid a gross familiarity, even where the connexion is most intimate. The human heart is so constituted as to love respect. It would indeed be unnatural in very intimate friends to behave to each other with stiffness; but there is a delicacy of manner, and a flattering deference that tend to preserve that degree of esteem, which is necessary to support affection, and which is lost in contempt when it deviates into excessive familiarity. An habitual politeness of manners will prevent even indifference from degenerating to hatred. It will refine, exalt, and perpetuate affection.

But the best and most efficacious rule is, that we should not think our moral and religious duties are only to be practised in public, and in the sight of those from whose applause we expect the gratification of our vanity, ambition, or avarice: but that we should be equally attentive to our behavior among those who can only pay us by reciprocal love. We must shew the sincerity of our principles and professions, by acting consistent with them, not only in the legislature, in the field, in the pulpit, at the bar, or in any public assembly, but at the fire side.



C H A P. XX.

SELF-TORMENTING.

“**D**ONT meddle with that gun, Billy,” said a careful mother; “If it should go off, it would kill you.” “It is not charged, mother,” says Will. “Well! but may be,” says the good old woman, “it will go off, even if it isn’t charged.”—“But there is no lock on it, ma’am.”

“ O dear Billy, I am afraid the hollow thing there, the barrel, I think you call it, will shoot, if there is no lock.”

Don't laugh at the old lady. Two thirds of our fears and apprehensions of the evils and mischiefs of this life, are just as well grounded, as her's were in this case. There are many unavoidable evils in life, which it becomes us as men and as Christians, to bear with fortitude; and there is a certain period assigned to us all, and yet dreaded by most of us, wherein we must conflict with death, and finally lose connection with all things beneath the sun. These things are beyond our utmost power to resist, or sagacity to evade. It is our wisest part, therefore, to prepare to encounter them, in such a manner as shall do honor to our profession, and manifest a perfect conformity to that directory on which our profession stands. But why need we anticipate unavoidable evils, and “*feel* a thousand deaths in *fearing* one?” Why need a woman be everlastingly burying her children, in her imagination, and spend her whole time in a fancied course of bereavment, because they are mortal, and must die some time or other? A divine teacher says, “sufficient for the day is the evil thereof; but we put new and unnecessary gall in all the bitter cups we have to drink in life, by artfully mixing, sipping, and smelling beforehand; like the squeamish patient, who, by viewing and thinking on his physic, brings a greater distress and burden on his stomach, before he takes it, than the physic itself could ever have done. I would have people be more careful of fire arms than they are: But don't take a gun barrel, unconnected with powder and lock, to be more dangerous than a broomstick.

Sergeant *Tremble* and his wife, during a time of general health, feel as easy and secure as if their children were immortal. Now and then a neighbor drops off with a consumption; or an apoplexy: But that makes no impression, as all their children are plump and hearty. If there are no cancers, dysenteries, small-pox, bladders in the throat, and such like things to be heard of, they almost bid defiance to death; but the moment information was given that a child six miles off, had the throat distemper, all comfort bade adieu to the house; and the misery then endured from dreadful apprehensions lest the disease enter the family, is unspeakable. The old sergeant thought that when the wind blew from that quarter, he could smell the infection, and therefore ordered the children to keep house, and drink

wormwood and rum, as a preservative against contagion. As for Mrs *Tremble*, her mind was in a state of never ceasing agitation at that time : A specimen of the common situation of the family is as follows :—

Susy your eyes look heavy, you dont feel a sore throat, do you ? Husband, I heard *Tommy* cough in the bed-room just now. I am afraid the distemper is beginning in his vitals, let us get up and light a candle : you don't begin to feel any sore on your tongue or your mouth, do you, my dear little chicken ? It seems to me *Molly* did not eat her breakfast with so good a stomach this morning as she us'd to. I'm in distress for fear she has got the distemper a coming on. The house was one day a perfect bedlam ; for having heard that rue and rum was an excellent guard in their present danger, the good lady dispensed the catholicon so liberally among her children one morning, that not a soul of them could eat all day ; *Tom* vomited heartily ; *Sue* look'd as red as fire ; and *Molly* as pale as death. O ! what terrors, and heart-achings till the force of the medicine was over ! To be short, the child that had the distemper died ; and no other child was heard of, in those parts to have it ; so that tranquility and security were restored to Mr. *Tremble's* family, and their children regarded as formerly, proof against mortality.

Mrs. *Forefight* keeps her mind in a continual state of distress and uneasiness, from a prospect of awful disasters that she is forewarned of by dreams, signs and omens. This by the way, is affronting behavior to common sense, and implies a greater reflection upon some of the divine perfections than some well meaning people are aware of. The good woman look'd exceedingly melancholy at breakfast, one day last week, and appeared to have lost her appetite. After some enquiry into the cause of so mournful a visage, we were given to understand, that she foresaw the death of some one in the family ; having had warning in the night by a certain noise that she never knew fail, and then she went on to tell how just such a thing happened, before the death of her father, and mother, and sister, &c. I endeavored to argue her out of this whimsical gloomy state of mind, but in vain : she insisted upon it, that tho' the noise lasted scarcely a minute, it began like the dying shriek of an infant, and went on to be like the tumbling of clods upon a coffin, and ended in the ringing of the bell. The poor woman wept bitterly for the loss of the child that was to die : however, she found afterwards occasion for uneasiness

on another account. The cat, unluckily shut up in the buttry, and dissatisfied with so long confinement, gave forth that dying shriek, which first produced the good woman's consternation; and then by some sudden effort to get out at a grate at the upper part of the room, overset a large pewter platter; the platter in its way overset a large wooden bowl full of milk, and both together in their way knock'd down a white stone dish of salmon, which came with them into a great brass kettle that stood upon the floor. The noise of the cat, might easily be taken for that of a child, and the sound of salmon upon a board, for that of a clod, and any mortal may be excused for thinking that a pewter platter, and a great earthen dish broken in fifty pieces, both tumbling into a brass kettle, sounds like a bell.

C H A P. XXI.

HISTORY of COLUMBUS.

EVERY circumstance relating to the discovery and settlement of America, is an interesting object of enquiry. Yet it is presumed, from the present state of literature in this country, that many persons, are but slightly acquainted with the character of that man, whose extraordinary genius led him to the discovery of the continent, and whose singular sufferings ought to excite the indignation of the world.

The Spanish historians, who treat of the discovery and settlement of South America, are very little known in the United States; and Dr. Robertson's history of that country, which, as is usual in the works of that judicious writer, contains all that is valuable on the subject, is not yet reprinted in America, and therefore cannot be supposed to be in the hands of American readers, in general: and perhaps no other writer in the English language has given a sufficient account of the life of Columbus to enable them to gain a competent knowledge of the history of the discovery of America.

Christopher Columbus was born in the republic of Genoa about the year 1447; at a time when the navigation of Europe was scarcely extended beyond the limits of the Mediterranean. The mariners compass had been invented and in common use for more than a century; yet with the help of this sure guide, prompted by the most ardent spirit of discovery, encouraged by the patronage of princes, the mariners of those days rarely ventured from the sight of land. They acquired great applause by sailing along the coast of Africa

and discovering some of the neighboring islands; and after pushing their researches with the greatest industry and perseverance for more than half a century, the Portuguese, who were the most fortunate and enterprising, extended their discoveries southward no farther than the equator.

The rich commodities of the East had for several ages been brought into Europe by the way of the Red Sea and the Mediterranean; and it had now become the object of the Portuguese to find a passage to India, by sailing round the Southern extremity of Africa, and then taking an eastern course. This great object engaged the general attention of mankind, and drew into the Portuguese service adventurers from every maritime nation of Europe. Every year added to their experience in navigation and seemed to promise a reward to their industry. The prospect, however of arriving in the Indies was extremely distant; fifty years perseverance in the same track, had brought them only to the equator, and it was probable that as many more would elapse before they could accomplish their purpose. But Columbus by an uncommon exertion of genius, formed a design no less astonishing to the age in which he lived, than beneficial to posterity. This design was to sail to India by taking a western direction. By the accounts of travellers who had visited India, that country seemed almost without limits on the east; and by attending to the spherical figure of the earth, Columbus drew this conclusion, that the Atlantic ocean must be bounded on the west either by India itself, or by some great continent not far distant from it.

This extraordinary man, who was now about twenty-seven years of age, appears to have united in his character every trait, and to have possessed every talent requisite to form and execute the greatest enterprizes. He was early educated in all the useful sciences that were taught in that day. He had made great proficiency in geography, astronomy, and drawing, as they were necessary to his favorite pursuit of navigation. He had now been a number of years in the service of the Portuguese, and had acquired all the experience that their voyages and discoveries could afford. His courage and perseverance had been put to the severest test, and the exercise of every amiable and heroic virtue rendered him universally known and respected. He had married a Portuguese lady, by whom he had two sons, Diego and Ferdinand; the younger of whom is the historian of his life.

Such was the situation of Columbus, when he formed and thoroughly digested a plan, which, in its operation and consequences, unfolded to the view of mankind one half of the globe, diffused wealth and dignity over the other, and extended commerce and civilization through the whole. To corroborate the theory which he had formed of the existence of a western continent, his discerning mind, which always knew the application of every circumstance that fell in his way, had observed several facts, which by others would have passed unnoticed. In his voyages to the African islands he had found, floating ashore after a long western storm, pieces of wood carved in a curious manner, canes of a size unknown in that quarter of the world, and human bodies with very singular features. Fully confirmed in the opinion that a considerable portion of the earth was still undiscovered, his genius was too vigorous and persevering to suffer an idea of this importance to rest merely in speculation, as it had done in the minds of Plato and Seneca, who appear to have had conjectures of a similar nature. He determined, therefore, to bring his favorite theory to the test of actual experiment. But an object of that magnitude required the patronage of a prince: and a design so extraordinary met with all the obstructions, delay and disappointments, which an age of superstition could invent, and which personal jealousy and malice could magnify and encourage. Happily for mankind, in this instance, a genius capable of devising the greatest undertakings, associated in itself a degree of patience and enterprize, modesty and confidence, which rendered him superior, not only to these misfortunes, but to all the future calamities of his life. Prompted by the most ardent enthusiasm to be the discoverer of new continents, and fully sensible of the advantages that would result to mankind from such discoveries, he had the mortification to waste away eighteen years of his life, after his system was well established in his own mind, before, he could obtain the means of executing his designs. The greatest part of this period was spent in successive and fruitless solicitations, at Genoa, Portugal and Spain. As a duty to his native country, he made his first proposal to the senate of Genoa; where it was soon rejected. Conscious of the truth of his theory, and of his own ability to execute his design, he retired without dejection from a body of men who were incapable of forming any just ideas upon the subject; and applied with fresh confidence to John the

second, King of Portugal, who had distinguished himself as a great patron of navigation, and in whose service Columbus had acquired a reputation which entitled him and his project to general confidence and approbation. - But here he suffered an insult much greater than a direct refusal. After referring the examination of his scheme to the council who had the direction of naval affairs; and drawing from him his general ideas of the length of the voyage, and the course he meant to take, that great monarch had the meanness to conspire with his council to rob Columbus of the glory and advantage he expected to derive from his undertaking. While Columbus was amused with this negociation, in hopes of having his scheme adopted and patronized, a vessel was secretly dispatched, by order of the king, to make the intended discovery. Want of skill and perseverance in the pilot rendered the plot unsuccessful: and Columbus, on discovering the treachery, retired, with an ingenuous indignation, from a court capable of such duplicity.

Having now performed what was due to the country that gave him birth, and to the one that had adopted him as a subject, he was at liberty to court the patronage of any prince who should have the wisdom and justice to accept his proposals. He had communicated his ideas to his brother Bartholomew, whom he sent to England to negotiate with Henry seventh; at the same time that he went himself into Spain, to apply in person to Ferdinand and Isabella, who governed the united kingdoms of Aragon and Castile. The circumstances of his brother's application in England, which appears to have been unsuccessful, it is not to my purpose to relate; and the limits prescribed to this sketch, will prevent the detail of all the particulars relating to his own negotiation in Spain. In this negotiation Columbus spent eight years in the various agitations of suspense, expectation and disappointment; till, at length, his scheme was adopted by Isabella, who undertook, as Queen of Castile, to defray the expenses of the expedition; and declared herself, ever after, the friend and patron of the hero who projected it.

Columbus, who, during all his ill success in the negotiation, never abated any thing of the honors and emoluments which he expected to acquire in the expedition, obtained from Ferdinand and Isabella a full stipulation of every article contained in his first proposals. He was constituted high Admiral and Viceroy of all the Seas, Islands and Continents which he should discover, with power to receive one

tenth of the profits arising from their productions and commerce. These offices and emoluments were to be hereditary in his family.

These articles being adjusted, the preparations for the voyage were brought forward with rapidity; but they were by no means adequate to the importance of the expedition. Three small vessels, scarcely sufficient in size to be employed in the coasting business, were appointed to traverse the vast Atlantic; and to encounter the storms and currents that might be expected in so lengthy a voyage, through distant and unknown seas. These vessels, as might be expected in the infancy of navigation, were ill constructed, in a poor condition, and manned by seamen unaccustomed to distant voyages. But the tedious length of time which Columbus had spent in solicitation and suspense, and the prospect of being able soon to obtain the object of his wishes, induced him to overlook what he could not easily remedy, and led him to disregard those circumstances which would have intimidated any other mind. He accordingly equipped his small squadron with as much expedition as possible, manned with ninety men, and victualled for one year. With these, on the 3d of August, 1492, amidst a vast croud of anxious spectators, he set sail on an enterprise, which, if we consider the ill condition of his ships, the inexperience of the sailors, the length and uncertainty of his voyage, and the consequences that flowed from it, was the most daring and important that ever was undertaken. He touched at some of the Portuguese settlements in the Canary Isles, where, although he had but a few days run, he found his vessels needed refitting. He soon made the necessary repairs, and took his departure from the westernmost Islands that had hitherto been discovered. Here he left the former track of navigation, and steered his course due west.

Not many days after he had been at sea, he began to experience a new scene of difficulty. The sailors now began to contemplate the dangers and uncertain issue of a voyage, the nature and length of which was left entirely to conjecture. Besides sickness and timidity, natural to men unaccustomed to the discipline of a seafaring life, several circumstances contributed to inspire an obstinate and mutinous disposition, which required the most consummate art, as well as fortitude, in the admiral, to control. Having been three weeks at sea, and experienced the uniform course of the trade winds, which always blow in a western direction, they contended, that, should they continue the same course

For a longer period, the same wind would never permit them to return to Spain. The magnetic needle began to vary its direction. This being the first time that phenomenon was ever discovered, it was viewed by the sailors with astonishment, and considered as an indication that nature itself had changed her course, and that Providence was determined to punish their audacity, in venturing so far beyond the ordinary bounds of man. They declared that the commands of their sovereign had been fully obeyed, in their proceeding so many days in the same direction, and so far surpassing the attempts of all former navigators, in quest of new discoveries. Every talent, requisite for governing, soothing and tempering the passions of men, is conspicuous in the conduct of Columbus on this occasion. The dignity and affability of his manners, his surprising knowledge and experience in naval affairs, his unwearied and minute attention to the duties of his command, gave him a complete ascendancy over the minds of his men, and inspired that degree of confidence which would have maintained his authority in almost any possible circumstances. But here, from the nature of the undertaking, every man had leisure to feed his imagination with all the gloominess and uncertainty of the prospect. They found, every day, that the same steady gales carried them with great rapidity from their native country, and indeed from all countries of which they had any knowledge. Notwithstanding all the variety of management with which Columbus addressed himself to their passions, sometimes by soothing them with the prognostics of discovering land, sometimes by flattering their ambition and feasting their avarice with the glory and wealth they would acquire from discovering those rich countries beyond the Atlantic, and sometimes by threatening them with the displeasure of their sovereign, should timidity and disobedience defeat so great an object, their uneasiness still increased. From secret whispering, it arose to open mutiny and dangerous conspiracy. At length they determined to rid themselves of the remonstrances of Columbus, by throwing him into the sea. The infection spread from ship to ship, and involved officers as well as common sailors. They finally lost all sense of subordination, and addressed their commander in an insolent manner, demanding to be conducted immediately back to Spain; or, they assured him, they would seek their own safety by taking away his life. Columbus, whose sagacity and penetration had

discovered every symptom of the disorder, was prepared for this last stage of it, and was sufficiently apprised of the danger that awaited him. He found in vain to contend with passions he could no longer control. He therefore proposed that they should obey his orders for three days longer; and, should they not discover land in that time, he would then direct his course for Spain. They complied with his proposal; and, happily for mankind, in three days they discovered land. This was a small island, to which Columbus gave the name of San Salvador. Their first interview with the natives was a scene of amusement and compassion on the one part, and of astonishment and adoration on the other. The natives were entirely naked, simple and timorous; and they viewed the Spaniards as a superior order of beings, descended from the Sun, which, in that island, and in most parts of America, was worshipped as a Deity. By this it was easy for Columbus to perceive the line of conduct proper to be observed toward that simple and inoffensive people. Had his companions and successors, of the Spanish nation, possessed the wisdom and humanity of that discoverer, the benevolent mind would feel no sensations, of regret, in contemplating the extensive advantages arising to mankind from the discovery of America.

In this voyage, Columbus discovered the islands of Cuba and Hispaniola; on the latter of which, he erected a small fort, and having left a garrison of thirty-eight men, under the command of an officer by the name of Arada, he set sail for Spain. Returning across the Atlantic, he was overtaken by a violent storm, which lasted several days, and increased to such a degree, as baffled all his naval skill, and threatened immediate destruction. In this situation, when all were in a state of despair, and it was expected that every sea would swallow up the crazy vessel, he manifested a serenity and presence of mind perhaps never equalled in cases of like extremity. He wrote a short account of his voyage, and of the discoveries he had made, wrapped it in an oiled cloth, enclosed it in a cake of wax, put it into an empty cask, and threw it overboard; in hopes that some accident might preserve a deposit of so much importance to the world.

The storm however abated, and he at length arrived in Spain; after having been driven, by stress of weather, into the port of Lisbon, where he had opportunity, in an interview with the King of Portugal, to prove the truth of his

system by arguments more convincing than those he had before advanced, in the character of an humble and unsuccessful suitor. He was received every where in Spain with royal honors ; his family was ennobled, and his former stipulation, respecting his offices and emoluments, was ratified in the most solemn manner, by Ferdinand and Isabella ; while all Europe resounded his praises and reciprocated their joy and congratulations on the discovery of a new world.

The immediate consequence of this was a second voyage ; in which Columbus took charge of a squadron of seventeen ships of considerable burthen. Volunteers, of all ranks and conditions, solicited to be employed in this expedition. He carried over fifteen hundred persons, together with all the necessaries for establishing a Colony, and extending his discoveries. In this voyage he explored most of the West-India Islands ; but on his arrival at Hispaniola, he found the garrison he had left there had been totally destroyed by the natives, and the fort demolished. He however proceeded in the planting of his Colony ; and, by his prudent and humane conduct towards the natives, he effectually established the Spanish authority in that Island. But while he was thus laying the foundation of their future grandeur in South-America, some discontented persons, who had returned from the Colony to Spain, together with his former enemies in that kingdom, conspired to accomplish his ruin.

They represented his conduct in such a light at court, as to create uneasiness and distrust in the jealous mind of Ferdinand, and made it necessary for Columbus again to return to Spain, in order to counteract their machinations, and to obtain such farther supplies as were necessary to his great political and benevolent purposes. On his arrival at court, and stating with his usual dignity and confidence the whole history of his transactions abroad, every thing wore a favorable appearance. He was received with usual honors, and again solicited to take charge of another squadron, to carry out farther supplies, to pursue his discoveries, and in every respect to use his discretion in extending the Spanish Empire in the new world. In this third voyage he discovered the continent of America at the mouth of the river Oronoke. He rectified many disorders in his government of Hispaniola which had happened in his absence ; and every thing was going on in a prosperous train, when an event was announced to him, which com-

pleted his own ruin, and gave a fatal turn to the Spanish policy and conduct in America. This was the arrival of Francis de Bovadilla, with a commission to supercede Columbus in his government ; and with power to arraign him as a criminal, and to judge of his former administration.

It seems that by this time the enemies of Columbus, despairing to complete his overthrow by groundless insinuations of misconduct, had taken the more effectual method of exciting the jealousy of their sovereigns. From the promising samples of gold and other valuable commodities brought from America, they took occasion to represent to the King and Queen, that the prodigious wealth and extent of the countries he had discovered, would soon throw such power into the hands of the Viceroy, that he would trample on the royal authority, and bid defiance to the Spanish power. These arguments were well calculated for the cold and suspicious temper of Ferdinand, and they must have had some effect upon the mind of Isabella. The consequence was the appointment of Bovadilla, who had been the inveterate enemy of Columbus, to take the government from his hands. The first tyrant of the Spanish nation in America, began his administration by ordering Columbus to be put in chains on board a ship, and sending him prisoner to Spain. By relaxing all discipline, he introduced disorder and licentiousness throughout the colony. He subjected the natives to a most miserable servitude, and apportioned them out in large numbers among his adherents. Under this severe treatment perished, in a short time, many thousands of those innocent people.

Columbus was carried in his fetters to the Spanish court, where the King and Queen either feigned or felt a sufficient regret at the conduct of Bovadilla towards this illustrious prisoner. He was not only released from confinement, but treated with all imaginable respect. But, although the king endeavored to expiate the offence by censuring and recalling Bovadilla, yet we may judge of his sincerity from his appointing Nicholas de Ovando, another bitter enemy of Columbus, to succeed in the government, and from his ever after refusing to reinstate Columbus, or to fulfil any of the conditions on which the discoveries were undertaken. After two years solicitation for this or some other employment, he at length obtained a squadron of four small vessels, to attempt new discoveries. He now set out, with the ardor and enthusiasm of a young adventurer, in

quest of what was always his favorite object, a passage in to the South Sea, by which he might sail to India. He touched at Hispaniola, where Ovando, the governor, refused him admittance on shore, even to take shelter during a hurricane, the prognostics of which his experience had taught him to discern. By putting into a small creek, he rode out the storm, and then bore away for the continent. Several months, in the most boisterous season of the year, he spent in exploring the coast round the gulph of Mexico, in hopes of finding the intended navigation to India. At length he was shipwrecked, and driven ashore on the island of Jamaica.

His cup of calamities seemed now completely full. He was cast upon an island of savages, without provisions, without any vessel, and thirty leagues from any Spanish settlement. But the greatest providential misfortunes are capable of being imbittered by the insults of our fellow creatures. A few of his hardy companions generously offered, in two Indian canoes, to attempt a voyage to Hispaniola, in hopes of obtaining a vessel for the relief of the unhappy crew. After suffering every extremity of danger and hardship, they arrived at the Spanish colony in ten days. Ovando, through personal malice and jealousy of Columbus, after having detained these messengers eight months, dispatched a vessel to Jamaica, in order to spy out the condition of Columbus and his crew, with positive instructions to the Captain not to afford them any relief. This order was punctually executed. The captain approached the shore, delivered a letter of empty compliment from Ovando to the Admiral, received his answer, and returned. About four months afterwards a vessel came to their relief; and Columbus, worn out with fatigues and broken with misfortunes, returned for the last time to Spain. Here a new distress awaited him, which he considered as one of the greatest he had suffered in his whole life. This was the death of Queen Isabella, his last and greatest friend.

He did not suddenly abandon himself to despair. He called upon the gratitude and justice of the king, and, in terms of dignity, demanded the fulfilment of his former contract. Notwithstanding his age and infirmities, he even solicited to be farther employed in extending the career of discovery, without a prospect of any other reward but the consciousness of doing good to mankind. But Ferdinand, cold, ungrateful, and timid, dared not to comply with a single proposal of this kind, lest he should encrease

his own obligations to a man, whose services he thought it dangerous to reward. He therefore delayed and avoided any decision on these subjects, in hopes that the declining health of Columbus would soon rid the court of the remonstrances, of a man, whose extraordinary merit was, in their opinion, a sufficient occasion of destroying him. In this they were not disappointed. Columbus languished a short time, and gladly resigned a life, which had been worn out in the most essential services that perhaps were ever rendered, by any human character, to an ungrateful world.

C H A P. XXII.

Discovery and Settlement of NORTH AMERICA.

ALTHO' Columbus was the first discoverer of America, and ought to have had the honor of giving it his name, yet one Americus Vesputius, a native of Florence, who made a voyage hither some years after Columbus gave name to this vast continent. Columbus however, confined his discoveries to the islands in the gulf of Mexico, and to the southern continent.

North America was discovered some years after
1497 Columbus's first voyage, by Sebastian Cabot, an Englishman, who obtained a commission from Henry VII. for discovering, settling, and possessing heathen countries. The first land he made was Nova-Scotia.

1538 Sir Humphry Gilbert took possession of Newfoundland and St. Lawrance, and began the fishing trade.

1606 The first settlement of Canada, was made by Monsieur du Mont, a Frenchman. Quebec was once taken by some English adventurers; but was resigned

1629 to the French by treaty, and continued in their possession, till it was taken by the English, under the

1632 command of General Wolfe.

V I R G I N I A.

1584 The first grant of territory, within the present limits of the United States, was made to Sir Walter Raleigh. It included all the lands, from thirty-three to forty degrees of north latitude; to which he gave the name, *Virginia*, in honor of Queen Eli-

zabeth, who was never married. This grant was vacated by Sir Walter's attainders.

April
1606

King James, the first, by his letters patent divided Virginia, into North and South Virginia. The latter comprehended between the thirty-fourth and forty-first degrees of latitude, he granted to the London company. This patent was vacated by desire of the company, and a new grant was made to them bounded by the fortieth degree of latitude.

While the property of Virginia was in Sir Walter, he made several fruitless attempts to settle it. Nearly half the first colony, was destroyed by the savages, and the rest, consumed and worn down by fatigue and famine, returned to England in despair. The second colony, was totally destroyed, probably by the savages. The third suffered a similar fate; and the fourth quarrelling among themselves, neglecting their lands to hunt for gold, and provoking the Indians by their insolent behavior, lost several men, and the famished remains of them would have returned home, had they not met Lord Delaware at the mouth of Chesapeek Bay, with a squadron loaded with provisions for their relief. The attention which this nobleman paid to this infant settlement, will enroll his name among the founders of the western empire, and the benefactors of mankind.

1606

The first permanent settlement was made on James River, and called James Town. It is now an inconsiderable village.

NEW - Y O R K.

1608

Captain Henry Hudson, in his second voyage in search of a north-west passage to the East-Indies, discovered the river which takes his name. The Dutch soon after established a small factory at New York, and another at Albany. They kept possession about fifty years, when upon the breaking out of the war between the English and the Dutch, king Charles. II^d, granted to his brother James, duke of York, the tract of land which now includes New-York, New-Jersey, and part of Pennsylvania. The duke sent a body of troops under the command of Sir Robert Car, and took possession of New-York, without much resistance. The Dutch, by way of reprisal, took the English settlement in Surinam.

1614

1667 They afterwards conquered New-York ; but at the treaty of peace, signed at Breda, it was ceded to the English in Exchange for Surinam, and continued an English government, till the late revolution.

N E W - E N G L A N D .

Before the settlement of Virginia, or of New-York
 1602 captain Gosnold had explored the eastern shore of New-England—he discovered and gave name to Elizabeth's Island, and Martha's Vineyard, in Boston bay. When king James divided Virginia, by
 1606 his letters patent, the territory between the thirty-eighth and forty-fifth degrees of latitude, was called *North-Virginia*. Several years afterwards, he incorporated a number of persons, among whom, were the duke of Lenox, the marquisses of Buckingham and Hamilton, and the earls of Arundel and Warwick, by the name of the "Council established at Plymouth." To this company he made an absolute
 1620 grant of all the lands in America, between the fortieth and forty-eighth degrees of north latitude, throughout the main land, from sea to sea : excepting only such lands as were at that time, actually possessed by some other christian prince or state.

M A S S A C H U S E T T S .

The same year, in which this grant was made, a number of Puritans, who had experienced some severities from the intolerant spirit of James and archbishop Laud, sought a retreat in the wilds of America. They to the number of one hundred and one, arrived in the month of November, and seated themselves at Plymouth, in Massachusetts-Bay. Here they suffered all the inconveniences of cold, poverty and sickness. Many of them died during the winter ; but the free enjoyment of their religion, reconciled the survivors to their new situation. They bore their hardships with unexampled patience ; and, by their industry, soon procured a comfortable subsistence.

Within eight years from the first planting of Plymouth, the colony had become respectable, by new emigrations from England. They proceeded to enlarge their settlements, and built Salem* and Boston†
 *1627
 †1630
 tont. These settlements were made in consequence

1629 of a grant from the Plymouth company, to Henry Roswel, Sir John Young and others, of all that part of New-England, which lies between a line drawn three miles north of Merrimack river, and another drawn three miles south of Charles river, from the Atlantic to the South Sea. These were the antient limits of Massachusetts-Bay. In the year following, this grant was confirmed by Charles the I.

C O N N E C T I C U T.

1631 Three years after, Robert, Earl of Warwick, president of the council of Plymouth, granted to Lord Say and Seal, to Lord Brook and others, a tract of land, extending from Narraganset river, forty leagues on the sea coast; and thence through the main land, from the Western Ocean to the South Sea. This is the first grant of Connecticut. Smaller grants, from the first patentees, were afterwards made to particular people; in consequence of which Mr. Fenwick made a settlement at the mouth of Connecticut river, and gave it the name of Saybrook, in honor of the Lords Say and Seal, and Brook. Soon after, Mr. Haynes and Mr. Hooker left Massachusetts Bay, and settled Hartford, near which had been a small Dutch settlement, the remains of which are still to be seen, on the bank of Connecticut river. The following year Mr. Eaton and Mr. Davenport seated themselves at New-Haven. Connecticut and New-Haven were separate governments, till the reign of Charles the second; when by agreement they were both incorporated, by the name of "the
1662
Ap. 23. governor and company of Connecticut." The charter by which these colonies were united still continues to be the basis of their government.

R H O D E - I S L A N D.

Nothwithstanding the Puritans, who settled New-England, fled from their native country to avoid persecution, yet they possessed the same persecuting spirit themselves. This spirit discovered itself by the banishing of the Quakers and Anabaptists from Boston; who retired southward and built the town

- 1634 of Providence. These peaceable people, driven by the cruel and sanguinary rigor of the puritans, to seek a refuge abroad, extended their settlements to
 1674 Rhode-Island, and in the reign of Charles the second, obtained a charter which continues to be the constitution of the state.

N E W - H A M P S H I R E.

- 1621 Soon after the settlement of Plymouth, in Massachusetts, Captain John Mason, obtained from the council, a grant of land, from the river Naumkeag, now Salem, round Cape-Ann, to Merrimack river, and from the sea to the heads of those rivers ; with the islands lying within three miles of the coast. This district was called *Marianna*. The next year, another grant was made to Mason and Sir Ferdinand Gorges, jointly, of the whole territory, from Merrimack to Sagadahok river, and from the ocean, to the lakes and river of Canada. This district, which includes the other, was called *Laconia*.

- Under the authority of this grant, a settlement
 1623 was made near the mouth of Piscataqua river, at a place called Little Harbor, about a mile from Portsmouth, the present capital of New Hampshire. Six
 1629 years afterwards, a purchase was made of the natives, who gave a deed of the tract of land, lying between the Merrimack and Piscataqua rivers.

The same year, Mason procured a new patent under the common seal of the council of Plymouth, of the lands between the same rivers : which patent covered the whole Indian purchase. This district is called New-Hampshire.

- Some years after the settlements on Piscataqua,
 1641 New-Hampshire was, by agreement, united to the government of Massachusetts. It continued under this jurisdiction, till the heir of John Mason set up his claim to it, and procured a confirmation of his title. It was then separated from Massachusetts, and erected into a distinct government. The heirs
 1679 of Mason sold their title to the lands in New-Hampshire, to Samuel Allen of London, for two thousand
 1691 seven hundred and fifty pounds. This produced new controversies, concerning the property of the lands, which embroiled the province for many years

The inhabitants about this time, suffered extremely by the cruelty of the savages : the towns of Exeter and Dover were frequently surprized in the night—the houses plundered and burnt—the men killed and scalped—and the women and children, either killed or led captives into the wilderness. The first settlers in other parts of New-England, were also harrassed by the Indians, at different times ; and it would require volumes to enumerate their particular sufferings.

1635 The Plymouth company resigned their grant to the king ; but this resignation, did not materially affect the patentees under them ; as the several grants to companies and individuals, were mostly confirmed, at some subsequent period by charters from the crown.

NEW - J E R S E Y.

about 1614 It is not certain at what time the Swedes and Dutch settled upon the lands about the Hudson and Delaware, but it must have been after the settlement of Virginia, and before the settlement of New-England. The claims of these nations extended from the thirty-eighth to the forty-first degree of latitude. To this tract of country, they gave the name of New-Netherlands. It continued in their hands, till the reign of Charles the second, when it was given to the duke of York. 1663 A part of this territory was called Newyork, in honor of the duke ; and the whole as has been already mentioned, passed first by conquest, and afterwards by treaty, into the hands of the English.

1664 That part which lies between the Hudson and the Delaware, was granted to Lord Berkeley and Sir George Carteret, and called New-Jersey*. The first grant however, was merely a lease for one year. 1672 The proprietors appointed Philip Carteret, the first Governor, and directed the land to be purchased of the Indians.

1673 After the New-Netherlands had been conquered by the Dutch, and again restored to the English by treaty, the grants, both of king Charles to his brother the duke of York, and of the duke to the proprietors, were renewed. Lord Berkley had sold

H

* Or Nova Cesarea.

- 1673 his share of the territory, to John Fenwick, Esq. who
 1674 soon after conveyed it to William Penn, Gawen Law-
 ry, and Nicholas Lucas.
- 1676 Two years after the proprietors divided their pro-
 perty which they had before held, as joint-tenants.
 Sir George Carteret had the east division, called East
 New-Jersey : Penn, Lawry, and Lucas, took the
 west division, called West New-Jersey. The line
 of division was drawn from Little Egg-Harbor, to
 Hudson's river, at the forty-first degree of latitude.
 Each party gave to the other quit claim deeds of its
 own division.
- 1678 Two years after this partition, Carteret, by his
 last will vested all his property in East-Jersey, in cer-
 tain trustees, to be sold for the payment of his debts.
- 1682 The trustees conveyed it to twelve proprietors, who
 disposed of their rights at pleasure. The govern-
 ment continued in the proprietors, till the reign of
- 1702 queen Anne; when it was resigned to the crown.
 The government was then annexed to New-York—
 the people chose their assemblies; but the governor
 of New-York, used to attend them. The govern-
 ment was however detached from that of New-York,
 before the late revolution, when the two Jerseys be-
 came an independent state.

A considerable part of the state, still remains in the heirs
 or assigns of the proprietors. New-Jersey takes its name
 from the island of that name in the English channel, where
 Sir George Carteret had considerable possessions.

P E N N S Y L V A N I A .

- The first grant of Pennsylvania was designed by
 Charles the second, for the famous Admiral Penn, as a
 reward for his services. But the admiral dying be-
 fore the grant was completed, it was made to William
 Penn, and included a tract of land extending from
 1680 twelve miles north of New-Castle along the Dela-
 ware, to the beginning of the forty-third degree of
 latitude, and from the Delaware westward five degrees
 of longitude.

William Penn, who was distinguished as a *good* as well as a
great man, took care to acquire the best of titles to his lands,
 by legal purchases from the natives, the sole proprietors of
 the soil. He introduced into his settlement a most liberal
 plan of civil and religious policy—he tolerated all religious

sects, and thus invited not only his own sect, the *friends*, to remove from England, but also vast numbers of all denominations from Ireland and Germany.

The government continued in the descendants of William Penn, till the late revolution; when the people assembled, formed a republican constitution of government, and gave the proprietors a sum of money* in lieu of all quit-rents.

In one century from the date of the charter of Pennsylvania, its inhabitants amounted to almost four hundred thousand souls. Its situation is favorable for commerce, and it has the singular felicity of being peopled principally by Quakers and Germans, whose habits of industry and frugality are adapted to the accumulation of wealth.

DELAWARE.

The Swedes and Dutch were among the first settlers in North America. They had planted themselves on the banks of the Delaware, many years before William Penn obtained his grant, and their descendants remain there to this day. Their settlements were comprehended in the grant to the Duke of York; and when William Penn came to take possession of his lands in America, he purchased the three counties, now state of Delaware, of the Duke, and united them to his government. They were afterwards separated, in some measure, from Pennsylvania. They had their own assemblies, but the Governor of Pennsylvania used to attend, as he did in his own proper government. At the late revolution, the three counties were erected into a sovereign state.

MARYLAND.

1632 During the reign of Charles the first, lord Baltimore applied for a patent of lands in Virginia, and obtained a grant of a tract upon Chesapeek Bay, containing nearly one hundred and forty miles square. This tract was named *Maryland*, in honor of queen Henrietta Maria. Lord Baltimore was a Roman Catholic, and with a number of that denomination began a settlement in Maryland. The rigor of the laws in England against this religion drove many of the best families from that country, and greatly promoted the settlement of Maryland. Lord Baltimore procured an act of Assembly, giving free liberty for
* 120,000*l.* sterling.

all denominations of christians to enjoy their religious opinions. But upon the revolution in England, the penal laws against the Catholics were extended to the settlements in Maryland; and the Episcopal Church was established, both here and in Virginia. This establishment continued till the late revolution.

Maryland was a proprietary government, and at the commencement of the late war, was in the hands of Lord Harford, a natural son of the late lord Baltimore. But upon the revolution in America, the people assembled and formed a constitution of civil government, similar to those of the other states. Lord Harford was an absentee during the war, and his property was confiscated. Since the war, he has applied to the legislature for his estate, but could not obtain even a compensation, or the quitrents, which were due before the commencement of the war.

The CAROLINAS.

The French, under the direction of Admiral Chastillon, made an early discovery on the southern coast of North America. They first landed near the river, now called Albemarle, in North-Carolina; but not being in a situation to establish a settlement, they returned to France.

1564 The admiral, pleased with the account they gave of the country, fitted out a small fleet, with about five hundred men, to begin a colony where their countrymen had landed on their first expedition. Here they built a fort, called fort Charles; and in honor of Charles the ninth, then king of France, they called the whole country *Carolina*. But the Spaniards obtained information of their proceedings, and sent a body of troops, which reduced the colony, and put the people to the sword.

No further attempts to effect a settlement here, were made by the French; nor were any attempts made by the English, until Sir Walter Raleigh projected an establishment on this coast*.

about 1663 In the reign of Charles the second, the earl of Clarendon, the duke of Albemarle, and others, obtained a grant of the lands between the thirty-first

* Sir Walter's first attempts, it is said, were made within the present limits of North-Carolina.

and thirty-sixth degrees of latitude ; they were constituted lords proprietors and invested with powers to settle and govern the country. They began a settlement, between Ashley and Cooper rivers, and called it Charlestown. The model of a constitution, and the body of laws which they introduced, were framed by the celebrated Mr. Locke.

This constitution was aristocratical ; establishing orders of nobility. The Landgraves, or first rank, had forty-eight thousand acres of land—the Cassiques, or second order, had twenty-four thousand acres—the Barons, or lower rank, had twelve thousand acres. The lower house was to be composed of representatives chosen by the towns or counties, and the whole legislature was denominated, a *parliament*. The lords proprietors stood in the place of a *king*.

They gave unlimited toleration of religion, but the Episcopalians, who were the most numerous, attempted to exclude the dissenters from a place in the legislature. This produced tumults and disorder among the settlers, and finally between the people and the lords proprietors. These dissensions checked the progress of the settlement, and induced the parliament of England to take the province under their immediate care. The proprietors accepted about twenty-four thousand pounds sterling for their property and jurisdiction ; except the earl Granville, who kept his eighth of the property. The constitution was new modelled, and the district divided into North and South Carolina. These remained separate royal governments, till they became independent by the late revolution.

G E O R G I A*.

The whole territory between the rivers, Savannah and Altamaha was vested, by the parliament of Great-Britain, in trustees, who were to promote a settlement of the country. Mr. Oglethorpe was appointed the first governor, and he began a settlement on Savannah river, with about a hundred and sixteen poor people. But the original plan of settlement was extremely injudicious, and could not fail to disappoint the expectations of the projectors.

H 2

* Georgia was so named in honor of George the second.

The grant to the trustees was therefore revoked, and the province erected into a royal government. It had just begun to recover from the low state, to which it had been reduced by the narrow policy of the English government, when the late war commenced. Georgia contains vast tracts of valuable land—its present government is liberal—and the settlement of it, by emigrations from other states, is uncommonly rapid.



G E O G R A P H Y .

C H A P. XXIII.

EXPLANATION of the TERMS in GEOGRAPHY.

THE *terraqeous globe* is the world or earth, consisting of land and water.

About three fifths of the surface of the earth is covered with water.

The land is divided into two great continents, the eastern and western.

The eastern continent is divided into Europe, Asia and Africa. The western continent is divided into North and South America.

A *Continent* is a vast tract of land, not separated into parts by seas.

An *Island* is a body of land, less than a continent, and surrounded with water.

A *Cape* is a point of land, running some distance into the sea.

A *Peninsula* is a narrow neck of land, running far into the sea.

A *Promontory*, or head-land, is a high point of land jutting into the sea.

A small rise of land, is called a *Hill*—a large rise is called a *Mountain*.

An *Isthmus* is a neck of land, which joins large divisions of the earth.

An *Ocean* is the largest division of water, and not enclosed by land.

That which washes the western shore of America, is called the *Pacific Ocean*. It is ten thousand miles wide, and separates America, from Asia.

That which washes the eastern shore of America, is called the *Atlantic Ocean*. It separates America from Europe and Africa, and is generally three thousand miles wide,

That which washes the southern coast of Asia, is called the *Indian Ocean*.

A *Sea* is the next largest division of water. It is commonly a branch of an ocean, extending into a continent*.

The passage of water by which a sea communicates with an ocean, is called a *Strait*.

Lakes are large bodies of water surrounded by land. When these bodies of water are small they are called *Ponds*.

A *Bay*, is a part of the sea, extending into the land, and not wholly surrounded by it.

When a bay is very large, penetrates far into the land, and is almost enclosed by it, it is denominated a *Gulph*.

A passage of water, between an Island and the continent, and communicating with the ocean, is called a *Sound*.

Waters arising in small quantities out of the earth, are called *Springs*. The small streams flowing from springs, lakes and ponds, are called *Rivulets*, *Rills*, *Runs*, or *Brooks*. When numbers of these are united and form large streams, the streams are called *Rivers*.

Latitude is the distance from the equator, either north or south.

Longitude is the distance from any meridian, either east or west.

WESTERN CONTINENT.

America is about nine thousand miles in length, and generally three thousand miles in breadth; altho' in one place, at the Isthmus of Darien, it is only sixty.

North America, the country which we inhabit, is about five thousand miles in length, from north to south, and from one to three thousand miles in breadth, from east to west.

Mountains.

In all countries the land rises as we depart from the waters of the sea or rivers; so that the highest land is nearly at an equal distance from two rivers, or from the sea on one side, and from a river on the other.

Between the Atlantic and the Mississippi run several vast ridges of mountains, in a direction with the sea coast; that is, from northeast to southwest. They extend from about the latitude 42, in the back parts of New-York or Penn-

* In common discourse we use *sea* instead of *ocean*. The distinction between these terms, is principally confined to geographical treatises.

sylvania, to the middle of Georgia, nearly in latitude 31, where they all converge to a single ridge, and subside gradually into a level country, giving rise to some of the rivers which fall into the gulph of Mexico. The southern part of this ridge is called the *Apalachian mountains*, from a tribe of Indians living on a river, which has its source in the mountains, and is called *Apalachicola*. The first ridge in Pennsylvania and Virginia is called the *Blue Ridge*, about one hundred and thirty miles from the Atlantic. This is about four thousand feet high, measuring from its base. Between this and the North Mountain is a large fertile vale, the latter is the ridge of the greatest extent: but the principal ridge is the Alleghany, which divides the territory between the Atlantic and Mississippi, and is the height of land between them, although not so high from its base as the Blue Ridge. All the ridges are broken through by rivers, except the Alleghany. The passage of the Potomak, through the Blue ridge, is one of the most stupendous scenes in nature. It is thus described by a gentleman perfectly acquainted with this country*. "You stand on a very high point of land. On your right comes up the Shenandoah, having ranged along the right foot of the mountain 100 miles to seek a vent. On your left approaches the Potomak, in quest of a passage also. In the moment of their junction, they rush together against the mountain, rend it asunder, and pass off to the sea. The first glance of this scene hurries our senses into the opinion, that, at the creation, the mountains were formed first, that the rivers began to flow afterwards, that in this place particularly they have been dammed up by the Blue Ridge of mountains, and have formed an ocean, which filled the whole valley; that continuing to rise, they have at length broken over at this spot, and have torn the mountain down from its summit to its base. The piles of rock on each hand, but particularly on the Shenandoah, the evident marks of their disrapture and avulsion from their beds, by the powerful agents of nature, corroborate the impression. But the distant finishing which nature has given to the picture, is of a very different character. It is a true contrast to the fore-ground. It is as placid and delightful, as that is wild and tremendous. For the mountain being clove asunder, she presents to your eye through the cleft, a final catch of smooth blue horizon, at an infinite distance in the plain country, inviting you, as it were,

* Mr. Jefferson.

from the riot and tumult roaring around, to pass through the breach and participate of the calm below.

"Here the eye ultimately composes itself; and that way too the road happens actually to lead. You cross the Potomac above the junction, pass along its side through the base of the mountain for three miles; its terrible precipices hanging over you, and within about twenty miles reach Frederick's-Town*, and the fine country round that. This scene is worth a voyage across the Atlantic. Yet here, as in the neighbourhood of the natural bridge, are people who have passed their lives within half a dozen miles, and have never been to survey these monuments of a war between rivers and mountains, which must have shaken the earth itself to its center."

Between the Delaware and the Hudson, the mountains are not so high. But near the Hudson, below Albany, the Kaatskill mountains rise to such a height, as to make a majestic appearance.

Between the Hudson and Connecticut rivers, the land rises into hills, near the sea; which hills run northward, and from the Green mountain in the state of Vermont. This ridge has the Hudson and lake Champlain on the west, and Connecticut river on the east. It extends from the ocean to Canada.

Between Connecticut river and the sea on the east, there is a ridge of high land, but no considerable mountains, till we arrive in the western parts of New-Hampshire, and the province of Main, nearly three hundred miles from the mouth of the river. There are the *White-hills*, which are higher than any others in New-England.

Rivers.

The river St. Lawrence flows out of the vast lakes which are on the north west of the United States, and running north east, falls into the Atlantic Ocean. It is very large, and navigable for vessels of burden to Quebec, three hundred miles from its mouth; but the navigation is obstructed by the ice, at least five months in the year.

Penobscot is a considerable river, which rises in the province of Main, and running south, falls into the bay of Fundy.

Kennebek has its source in the same country, and taking a southern direction, falls into the same bay.

The river Piscataqua rises in the mountains, in the State

* In Maryland, fifty-five miles west of Baltimore.

of New-Hampshire, and running south east, and empties into the sea, at Portsmouth.

Merrimack river rises in the highlands of New-Hampshire, and bending its course southeast, becomes navigable for small vessels at Haverhill, twelve miles from its mouth, where it forms the harbour of Newbury-Port.

Connecticut river has its source in the Province of Maine: Its course is southerly, and after running about three hundred miles, it falls into Long-Island sound. This river, like the Nile, overflows its banks, in the month of April or May, and forms a rich meadow on one side or other, for a length of three hundred miles, almost without any interruption. It is navigable for vessels of eighty or one hundred tons, to Hartford, fifty miles from its mouth. It is navigable for boats, three hundred miles, except several falls, which are impassible. This river, like most others in America, abounds with fish; and it is remarkable, that no salmon were ever seen southward of this river.

The river Hudson, which takes its name from the discoverer, forms a large bay, navigable for ships of burden, one hundred and thirty miles, to the city of the same name. The tide flows to Albany, one hundred and sixty miles from the mouth. This river rises in the country west of lake Champlain, and nine miles above Albany receives the Mohawk, a large stream, which, above the falls is navigable for boats. The falls of the Mohawk, or as they are usually called, in the language of the natives, Kohoez, are a great curiosity; being a perpendicular descent, of at least seventy feet, from one side of the river to the other. The large rivers to the southward of the Hudson, have their sources in the vast mountains, that extend from the lakes to Florida, which have been described.

The Mississippi rises in the unexplored regions to the northwest of the United States. It runs south, dividing the continent, at nearly equal distances from the Atlantic and Pacific oceans, and falls into the gulf of Florida: Its course is almost four thousand miles. A bar at the mouth, and a very rapid current, render the navigation of this river difficult.

It is remarkable, that almost all the rivers in America, as well as many places, now settled by English Americans, preserve the names given them by the natives of the country. This is paying a tribute of respect to the Indians, who for-

merly possessed these fertile regions; and the names are a kind of history of the savage settlements.

Islands.

The principal islands on the American coast are, Newfoundland, which lies in the gulf of St. Lawrence, and whose banks furnish the best fishery in the world.

Cape Breton and St. John's which lie to the southward of Newfoundland.

Rhode-Island, which is small but fertile, and lies at the mouth of Providence river.

Long-Island, which stretches along the coast of Connecticut and New-York.

Besides these, there are great numbers of small islands, some of which are inhabited, and very fertile. Such are Staten-Island, Block-Island, Fisher's Island, and Martha's Vineyard.

Capes.

Cape Race is the south-east point of the Island of Newfoundland. Another point of the same island on the east is called Cape Bonavista. On the north is Cape Hamilton.

Cape Sable is the southernmost point of land between the Bay of Fundy and the ocean. This is a dangerous place for ships.

Cape Anne is a point of land extending into the sea, on the north of Boston harbour.

Cape Cod extends a great distance into the sea, on the south of Boston harbour. It is a place of dangerous navigation, by reason of the banks of sand which run into the ocean, and render the water shallow, for two hundred miles.

Montauk point is the east end of Long-Island.

Cape May and Cape Henlopen are the two points of land formed by the mouth of Delaware river; Cape May upon the north, and Henlopen upon the south.

Cape Charles and Cape Henry are formed at the entrance of Chesapeake Bay: The first upon the north, and the last upon the south.

But the most remarkable and dangerous cape on the coast of North America is Hatteras, which is a point of land extending far into the ocean, from the coast of North-Carolina. The water is very shoal at a great distance from the land.

The gulf stream almost washes this point of land. The cape is remarkable for sudden squalls of wind, and for the most severe storms of thunder, lightning and rain, which happen almost every day, during one half the year.

To the southward of Hatteras, are Cape *Lookout*, Cape *Fear*, and Cape *Romain*. The shoals, which extend off the latter cape, render the navigation near the coast very dangerous.

Cape *Florida* is the southernmost point of land, on the east of the gulf of Mexico.

Bays.

The bay of *Fundy*, between New-England and Nova-Scotia, is remarkable for its tides, which rise to the height of fifty or sixty feet, and flow with such rapidity as to overtake animals which feed upon the shore.

The *Chesapeek* is one of the largest bays in the known world. Its entrance is in Virginia, and it extends two hundred and seventy miles to the northward, dividing Virginia and Maryland. Its width is generally eighteen miles, and its navigation is easy and safe. This bay receives the waters of some of the largest rivers in America; the Susquehanna—the Potowmack—the Rappahannock—York and James rivers.

Besides these, there are great numbers of smaller bays, that form harbors; such as Casco-Bay, at the mouth of the Kennebek. Chebukto Bay, in Nova-Scotia, is distinguished by the loss of a French fleet, destined for that port, in a former war between France and England.

Straits.

The straits of *Belisle* divide the island of Newfoundland from the Labrador coast.

The straits of *Canso* separate the island of Cape Breton from Nova-Scotia.

The strait, called *Hell-Gate*, between Long-Island and the main, near New-York, is remarkable for whirlpools, occasioned by the narrowness and crookedness of the channel, and the rocks, which render its passage unsafe, except at high or low water.

The Gulph Stream.

The Gulph stream is a remarkable phenomenon. It is a current in the ocean, which runs along the coast from the Gulph of Mexico to the banks of Newfoundland. It is generally about sixty leagues from shore, and its rapidity, three

miles an hour. It is supposed to be occasioned by the trade winds that are constantly driving the water to the westward ; which being compressed in the Gulf of Mexico, finds a passage between Florida and the Bahama Islands, and runs to the northeast along the American coast. This hypothesis is confirmed by another fact : It is said that the water, in the gulf of Mexico, is many yards higher, than on the western side of the continent in the Pacific ocean.

Lakes.

No country furnishes such Lakes as America. Lake Champlain, which is almost the smallest, is one hundred and thirty miles long, and generally twenty miles broad.

Lake Ontario, Eri, Huron and Michigan, are from three to five hundred miles in circumference. But Lake Superior exceeds all the others ; being fifteen hundred miles in circumference and containing many large islands. These lakes abound with fish.

Between the Lakes, Eri and Ontario, is the great cataract, called the falls of Niagara. Here a vast body of water descends almost perpendicularly one hundred and fifty feet ; producing the most terrible noise, and a fog or mist that covers the country for many miles.

These vast lakes are connected by streams navigable for boats ; and thro the middle of them runs the northern limits of the United States.

Cascade in Virginia.

There is a remarkable cascade or water-fall in Augusta, called the *Falling Spring*. It is a branch of the James, where it is called *Jackson's River*, rising in the mountain twenty miles south-west of the warm spring. The water falls over a rock two hundred feet, which is about fifty feet farther than the fall at Niagara. Between the sheet of water and the rock below, a man may walk across dry.

Caves.

Maddison's cave is a curiosity. It is on the north side of the Blue Ridge, and extends into the earth three hundred feet. The vault, or opening, is from twenty to forty feet high, of solid limestone, thro which water is continually percolating. This trickling down of the water has formed an incrustation on the sides of the cave ; and the dropping from

the top has formed solid spars, hanging like icicles ; and on the bottom it has formed figures like a sugar loaf.

In another ridge, at the Panther Gap, is the *Blowing Cave* ; from which issues a constant stream of air, sufficient to prostrate weeds at the distance of twenty yards. The air is strongest in dry frosty weather.

There are in Virginia some medicinal springs, particularly the *Warm Spring*, which issues in a stream sufficient to turn a grist mill. Its water, which is of a blood heat, is efficacious in the rheumatism. The *Hot Spring* is smaller. Its heat has boiled an egg, and the water has relieved persons when the warm spring has failed.

C H A P. XXIV.

GEOGRAPHY of the UNITED STATES.

THE United States of America are thirteen ; New-Hampshire, Massachusetts, Rhode-Island, Connecticut, (which four are usually called New-England) New-York, New-Jersey, Pennsylvania, Delaware, Maryland, Virginia, North-Carolina, South-Carolina, Georgia. Vermont is an independent state.*

The territory granted to these states, extends from Canada and the lakes to Florida ; and from the Atlantic Ocean, to the river Mississippi : It is about fourteen hundred miles in length, from north-east to south-west ; and from east to west, its breadth at the northern extremity, is about twelve hundred miles ; but at the southern, not more than seven hundred.

The northern part of this land upon the sea, is called the *Province of Main* ; but it belongs to the State of Massachusetts. It extends from the river Piscataqua, to Nova-Scotia, and from the ocean to Connecticut river. It contains three counties, and the large rivers, Penobscot and Kennebek. Its principal settlements, are Old York, Scarborough, and Falmouth. The last, which was the largest settlement, was burnt by the British troops, during the late war ; but is rebuilt, and now called *Portland*.

The sea shore is barren land ; but at a distance from the sea, and on the rivers, the land is tolerably fertile. The principal article of exportation is lumber.

N E W - H A M P S H I R E.

Is a tract of land originally carved out of Massachusetts.

* This State, and Kentucky (formerly a part of Virginia) have recently been admitted into the union as separate governments ; so that there are now fifteen United States of America.

It lies on the south side of the Piscataqua, between the sea and Connecticut river. Its form is nearly that of a sugar loaf, or pyramid, the base of which stretches nearly two hundred miles on Connecticut river; but its breadth is contracted to sixteen miles only on the sea.

Its principal Town, Portsmouth, lies near the mouth of the Piscataqua, where the river forms a good harbor, navigable for large ships. The town contains nearly five hundred houses, and about four thousand five hundred inhabitants. The principal articles of exportation, are lumber, and vessels, which are built at Exeter, a very pleasant settlement, fifteen miles from the mouth of the river.

At Hanover in the western part of the State, there is a college, founded by the late Dr. Wheelock, which consists of about one hundred and fifty students. It is called Dartmouth college, in honor of lord Dartmouth, one of the principal benefactors. The institution is in a very flourishing state.

M A S S A C H U S E T T S

Extends from the ocean on the east, to the bounds of New-York, on the west; being about one hundred and fifty miles in length. It has Rhode-Island and Connecticut on the south, and New-Hampshire and Vermont on the north; being about sixty miles in breadth.

Its capital, Boston, contains two thousand two hundred houses, and upwards of eighteen thousand inhabitants. It stands on a peninsula which is joined to the main land by a neck, about a mile in length, leading to Roxbury. On the opposite or north part of the town, a bridge covering Charles river, leads from Boston to Charlestown. This bridge, which was built by a company of gentlemen, in the years 1785 and 1786, is more than one thousand five hundred feet in length, and the noblest structure in America.

The harbor of Boston is capacious and safe. The principal wharf, which extends about six hundred yards into the sea, and is covered on one side, with large and convenient stores, far surpasses any thing of the kind in the United States.

About two miles from town, is the castle, which commands the entrance of the harbor. Here are mounted about forty heavy pieces of artillery, besides a large number of a smaller size. The fort is garrisoned by a company of soldiers who also guard the convicts, that are sentenced to labor.

These are all employed in making nails—a manufactory that is useful to the state.

On the west side of the town is the Mall, a very beautiful public walk, adorned with rows of trees, and in view of the common, which is always open to refreshing breezes from the sea.

Fifteen miles eastward of Boston, lies Salem, which contains seven hundred and thirty houses, and almost eight thousand inhabitants. Forty five miles from Boston lies Newbury-Port, near the mouth of Merrimack river; the harbor of which is safe, but of difficult entrance. This town contains nearly five hundred houses, and about five thousand inhabitants. These towns with Cape Anne, and Marblehead and Beverly, carry on the fishery, which furnishes the principal article of export in Massachusetts. The distance from Boston to Portsmouth, is sixty five miles.

The university of Cambridge, is the first literary institution on this continent. Its buildings are large and elegant, its library and philosophical apparatus, are the most complete of any in America. It is liberally endowed, and furnished with able professors in the principal branches of science. Its students are about one hundred and fifty.

R H O D E - I S L A N D State

Includes the island of that name, and Providence-plantations. It has Massachusetts on the north; Connecticut on the west; and the ocean upon the east and south.

The town of Newport, upon the island, contains nearly eight hundred houses, and about five thousand inhabitants; altho before the war it contained nine thousand. Its harbor is one of the largest and safest in the world, and of easy entrance.

Providence, situated at the head of navigation, on a large river, or arm of the sea, thirty miles from Newport, is at present in a flourishing condition. It contains almost six hundred houses. The business of this state consists principally in the whale fishing, and in the West-India trade.

The college at Providence is a magnificent building, and stands upon the heights east of the town, where it commands an extensive and beautiful prospect. It is an infant institution, and wants funds to support suitable professors.

C O N N E C T I C U T

Is bounded by Rhode-Island on the east, by Long-Island

found on the south, by Massachusetts on the north, and New-York on the west. Its extent is about one hundred miles from east to west, and sixty from north to south.

Its two capital towns, Hartford and New-Haven, are the seats of government. Part of these towns have been lately incorporated. The city of Hartford contains about four hundred houses ; it is situated at the head of navigation on Connecticut river, about forty miles from the sound. The city of New-Haven contains four hundred houses ; it lies on the sea shore, about forty miles west of Connecticut river. It is one of the most regular and beautiful settlements in America. In the center of the city, there is a spacious green, three hundred yards square, adorned with a row of trees on every side.

On the west side of the square, and in an elevated situation, stands Yale College, an institution founded in the year 1701, and which has produced a great number of distinguished literary characters. Its usual number of students is about one hundred and thirty.

The principal articles of export, are horses, cattle, provision, and lumber, which are sold in the West-India Islands.

The inhabitants of New-England are mostly the descendants of the first English settlers. There are no French, Dutch, or Germans, and very few Scotch and Irish in New-England. The increase, almost solely by natural population, including Vermont, is almost a million of whites.

N E W - Y O R K State

Extends from the ocean to Lake Champlain and Canada, and comprehends about twenty miles on the east, and forty on the west of the river Hudson. It has Connecticut, Massachusetts, and Vermont on the east, and New-Jersey and Pennsylvania on the west.

The city of New-York is situated upon a peninsula, or rather upon an island ; for the water flows around it, and it is connected with the continent by a small bridge only, called King's-Bridge, fifteen miles from the city. The city contains nearly three thousand five hundred houses. It is an excellent situation for trade—having a safe spacious harbor, which is seldom or never obstructed with ice.

Hudson's river is navigable for ships of almost any size, to the city of Hudson, which is about one hundred and

thirty miles from New-York—and small vessels go to Albany, thirty miles higher. Most of the trade on this river centers in New-York. The principal articles of exportation are wheat or flour, and lumber. New-York imports most of the European goods consumed in Connecticut, and this and the other New-England states, supply the New-York market with West-India produce.

This state was first settled by the Dutch ; and a very considerable part of the inhabitants are their descendants. The principal Dutch settlements are at New-York, Albany, Esopus, Claverak, and Skenactady. Albany is the only city which exhibits the Gothic taste in building. It is almost the oldest town in America, and there are houses still standing, the bricks of which were brought from Holland. It contains almost six hundred houses.

Long-Island also belongs to this state : altho' part of it formerly belonged to Connecticut, and was settled by the English. It extends from New-York eastward one hundred and fifty miles, and is generally twenty miles wide.

The College in New-York, called Columbia College, is well endowed and furnished with professors ; but its students are not numerous.

N E W - J E R S E Y

Has the river Hudson and the ocean on the east, and the Delaware on the west. It extends from Cape May at the entrance of the Delaware on the south, to the limits of New-York state, west of the Hudson, about twenty miles from the mouth of that river.

There are no large towns in this state. Trenton, the present seat of government, contains nearly two hundred houses, and is pleasantly situated, near the Delaware, and thirty miles from Philadelphia.

Princeton, a delightful situation, forty-two miles from Philadelphia, is the seat of a College, called Naufau Hall ; an institution which has produced a great number of eminent scholars. Its students amount to about one hundred.

The inhabitants are mostly descendants of the English and Dutch.

P E N N S Y L V A N I A

Extends from the Delaware on the east, five degrees of

longitude, or about three hundred and fifty miles west ; and from Maryland on the south, to New-York on the north, about one hundred and fifty miles.

The inhabitants consist of English, Germans, Irish, and Scotch. The *Friends*, who were the first settlers, form a numerous and respectable body of its inhabitants.

The city of Philadelphia is situated on the west bank of the Delaware, and extends, according to the plan, from Delaware to Skuylkill. The improved part of the city reaches only about half a mile from the Delaware : but along that river the buildings extend two miles, including Kensington and Southwark, which are the suburbs of the city.

It is the largest and most regular city in America. Its streets all cross each other at right angles, and form the whole city into squares.

Near the center is Market street, which is wider than the others, and contains the largest and best supplied market in America, or perhaps in the world.

The Statehouse is a magnificent structure, and the garden, belonging to it, has been lately improved and laid out in agreeable walks for the recreation of the citizens.

The hospital, the poor house, and prison ; the two former of brick, and the latter of stone, are noble buildings, and exceed any of the kind in this country. The new German reformed church, is the most magnificent structure of the kind in America, and was built at the expence of ten thousand pounds.

This city contains more than five thousand houses, and fifty thousand inhabitants. It is at the head of navigation, about one hundred and fifty miles from the mouth of the Delaware.

Lancaster, situated twelve miles from Susquehanna, and sixty-six miles west of Philadelphia, is the largest inland town in America.

Besides the Delaware, this state boasts of the Skuylkill and the Susquehanna, a large and noble river which rises in the northwestern parts of New-York, runs through Pennsylvania, forms a large tract of fertile meadow, and empties itself into Chesapeek Bay within the borders of Maryland.

The University of Pennsylvania is liberally endowed, and furnished with able professors in the different branches of science. During the winter, students of physic resort hither

thirty miles from New-York—and small vessels go to Albany, thirty miles higher. Most of the trade on this river centers in New-York. The principal articles of exportation are wheat or flour, and lumber. New-York imports most of the European goods consumed in Connecticut, and this and the other New-England states, supply the New-York market with West-India produce.

This state was first settled by the Dutch ; and a very considerable part of the inhabitants are their descendants. The principal Dutch settlements are at New-York, Albany, Esopus, Claverak, and Skenectady. Albany is the only city which exhibits the Gothic taste in building. It is almost the oldest town in America, and there are houses still standing, the bricks of which were brought from Holland. It contains almost six hundred houses.

Long-Island also belongs to this state : altho' part of it formerly belonged to Connecticut, and was settled by the English. It extends from New-York eastward one hundred and fifty miles, and is generally twenty miles wide.

The College in New-York, called Columbia College, is well endowed and furnished with professors ; but its students are not numerous.

N E W - J E R S E Y

Has the river Hudson and the ocean on the east, and the Delaware on the west. It extends from Cape May at the entrance of the Delaware on the south, to the limits of New-York state, west of the Hudson, about twenty miles from the mouth of that river.

There are no large towns in this state. Trenton, the present seat of government, contains nearly two hundred houses, and is pleasantly situated, near the Delaware, and thirty miles from Philadelphia.

Princeton, a delightful situation, forty-two miles from Philadelphia, is the seat of a College, called Nausau Hall ; an institution which has produced a great number of eminent scholars. Its students amount to about one hundred.

The inhabitants are mostly descendants of the English and Dutch.

P E N N S Y L V A N I A

Extends from the Delaware on the east, five degrees of

longitude, or about three hundred and fifty miles west ; and from Maryland on the south, to New-York on the north, about one hundred and fifty miles.

The inhabitants consist of English, Germans, Irish, and Scotch. The *Friends*, who were the first settlers, form a numerous and respectable body of its inhabitants.

The city of Philadelphia is situated on the west bank of the Delaware, and extends, according to the plan, from Delaware to Skuylkill. The improved part of the city reaches only about half a mile from the Delaware : but along that river the buildings extend two miles, including Kensington and Southwark, which are the suburbs of the city.

It is the largest and most regular city in America. Its streets all cross each other at right angles, and form the whole city into squares.

Near the center is Market street, which is wider than the others, and contains the largest and best supplied market in America, or perhaps in the world.

The Statehouse is a magnificent structure, and the garden, belonging to it, has been lately improved and laid out in agreeable walks for the recreation of the citizens.

The hospital, the poor house, and prison ; the two former of brick, and the latter of stone, are noble buildings, and exceed any of the kind in this country. The new German reformed church, is the most magnificent structure of the kind in America, and was built at the expence of ten thousand pounds.

This city contains more than five thousand houses, and fifty thousand inhabitants. It is at the head of navigation, about one hundred and fifty miles from the mouth of the Delaware.

Lancaster, situated twelve miles from Susquehanna, and sixty-six miles west of Philadelphia, is the largest inland town in America.

Besides the Delaware, this state boasts of the Skuylkill and the Susquehanna, a large and noble river which rises in the northwestern parts of New-York, runs through Pennsylvania, forms a large tract of fertile meadow, and empties itself into Chesapeek Bay within the borders of Maryland.

The University of Pennsylvania is liberally endowed, and furnished with able professors in the different branches of science. During the winter, students of physic resort hither

from different parts of the country, to attend the medical lectures.

A College has lately been founded at Carlisle, west of Susquehanna, and one hundred and twenty miles from Philadelphia. It is called Dickenson College, in honor of the late President Dickenson, and bids fair to be a very useful institution. Its students are nearly one hundred.

A German College has been lately founded at Lancaster; which is called Franklin, in honor of the great statesman and philosopher Dr. Franklin, one of its principal benefactors.

Flour is the staple article of produce in Pennsylvania. This, with many other valuable articles, and the trade of its neighboring states, enables Pennsylvania to carry on a very extensive commerce with foreign nations.

DELAWARE State

Comprehends three counties only, which extend from Pennsylvania to the entrance of the river Delaware, on the west bank of that river. The seat of government at present is Dover, a small inland town on the peninsula, between the Delaware and Chesapeek. The largest town in the state, is Wilmington, a beautiful settlement, thirty miles below Philadelphia. It contains four hundred houses, well built, and in a very pleasant situation.

Its principal exports are flour and corn.

MARYLAND

Is bounded by Pennsylvania on the north, by the ocean on the east, and by Virginia on the south and west. It is divided into two parts, called the eastern and western shores, by the great bay of Chesapeek.

The largest town in the state is Baltimore; which contains almost two thousand houses. It lies upon an arm of the Chesapeek, at a small distance from the mouth of Potomac river. It has one of the best harbors in America. From the head of Elk, which is at the head of the bay, to Baltimore, is about sixty miles.

The seat of government is Annapolis, thirty miles below Baltimore; a small city of about two hundred and sixty houses, but pleasantly situated on the bay. The houses are

generally large and elegant—an indication of great wealth. The stadthouse is the noblest structure of the kind in America.

The principal rivers are, the Susquehanna, which passes through the north part of the state, and the Potomak, which separates it from Virginia, which is one of the finest rivers on this continent.

There is a college founded upon the eastern shore, called *Washington* college, in honor of that illustrious character. A college is also erected on the western shore.

The staple commodity of this state is tobacco, of which great quantities are exported to Europe. The northern parts of the state also furnish great quantities of flour of an excellent quality. Corn is another considerable article of produce.

VIRGINIA.

This state is bounded by the Atlantic on the east; by Maryland, Pennsylvania, and the Ohio on the north; by the Mississippi and Ohio on the west, and by North-Carolina on the south. Its extent east and west, from the Atlantic to the Mississippi, is 758 miles—its breadth is about 200 miles. It contains 121,525 square miles, which are one third more than are contained in Great Britain and Ireland.

The eastern part of this state is penetrated by the Chesapeake, which leaves three counties on the eastern shore, between the Atlantic and the bay.

Virginia boasts of some of the largest and noblest rivers in America. On the north, the Potomak, which divides the state from Maryland, rises in the Alleghany mountains, bends its course south east, and falls into the Chesapeake. It is more than seven miles wide at its mouth. It has eighteen feet water to Alexandria, about one hundred and fifty miles from its mouth; and ten feet to Georgetown, eight miles higher. About five miles above are the falls, which obstruct the navigation for fifteen miles.

The Rappahannock is a smaller river, but affords twelve feet water to Fredericksburg, just below the falls.

York River furnishes, at York town, a few miles from its mouth, the best harbor in the State for vessels of a large size. It holds four fathom water, twenty-five miles above Yorktown. It is formed by the confluence of two rivers, *Pamunkey* and *Mattapony*; both of which are navigable for boats at some distance from their junction.

James river admits vessels of two hundred and fifty tons burthen to Warwick, and of one hundred and twenty-five tons to Richmond, about ninety miles from its mouth. It receives the *Appamattocks*, which affords navigation for small vessels to Petersburg. Just above Richmond are the falls where the water descends eighty feet, within six miles; above which the river is navigable for canoes, almost to the Blue Ridge.

Nansemond and *Chickahominy* afford water for small vessels, several miles into the country.

Elizabeth river affords an excellent harbor, and large enough for three hundred ships. At Norfolk it has eighteen feet water at common flood tide.

The *Roanoke* runs thro a part of Virginia, and is navigable for boats.

On the west of the Alleghany mountains, are the great and little Kanaway, which rise in the mountains, and run north west into the Ohio.

The *Monongahela* is one principal branch of the Ohio. The source of this river is seperated from the Potomak by the Allegany Ridge. The distance is about forty miles.

The river *Allegany* is the other principal branch of the Ohio. The head of this river is but fifteen miles distant from *Presque Isle*, on Lake Erie.

The rivers *Cumberland*, *Cherokee*, and *Kentucky*, water the western part of Virginia, and furnish navigation for batteaux into the heart of the country. They fall into the Ohio.

The towns in Virginia are not large: the people mostly residing on their plantations.

Alexandria, situated near the head of navigation on the Potomak, contains about three hundred houses, and is a place of great trade.

Fredericksburg, on the Rappahannok, contains about two hundred houses, and is a place of business.

Richmond, at the head of navigation on James River, and the seat of government, contains about three hundred houses.

Petersburg, twenty seven miles below Richmond, contains about the same number of houses, and is a place of great trade. Twenty-four thousand hogsheds of tobacco have been shipped in a year from this single port.

Norfolk was a well built town, but was laid in ashes by

the British troops, during the late war. It is partly rebuilt, and is the center of business in the state.

Williamsburg was formerly a flourishing and beautiful town. It contained about two hundred and fifty houses, and was the seat of government.

The principal street is one mile in length on a plain, with the college at one end, and the capitol, or state house at the other, exhibiting a pleasant prospect. But since the seat of government has been fixed at Richmond, the city has decayed. Williamsburg is the seat of a university, but the institution is not in a flourishing state.

The large and numerous rivers which water Virginia are very favorable for commerce. The principal article of exportation is tobacco, of which about 60,000 hogsheads are exported annually. Wheat is also raised in abundance, especially in the mountainous parts of the state. Corn is the principal article of food for the negroes, yet a surplus is raised for exportation.

Nine miles below Alexandria, upon the bank of the Potomac, is Mount Vernon, the seat of the illustrious Washington. His house is ancient, but magnificent. It stands upon a bend of the river, about fifty yards from the water, and commands an extensive and most agreeable prospect. On the other side, in front of the house, is a spacious bowling green, with serpentine roads on each side, adorned with rows of trees. On the right and left of these are his gardens, abounding with every thing convenient and ornamental.

N O R T H - C A R O L I N A

Is bounded by Virginia on the North, by the ocean on the east, by South-Carolina on the south, and by the Mississippi on the west.

The land for one hundred and thirty miles from the sea, is flat, sandy and barren, except near the river; but the highlands are fertile.

The navigation of this state is difficult and dangerous, by reason of the bars at the entrance of their rivers, and the flatness of the country.

The principal towns are Newbern, Halifax, Edenton, Wilmington, Fayetteville and Hillsborough. The principal rivers are, the Roanoke, which rises in the mountains of Virginia, and running southeast through a part of North-

Carolina, discharges itself into Albemarle sound. The Neus, which is navigable to Newbern ; and Cape-Fear River, navigable for vessels of barden to Wilmington.

The principal exports of this state, are pitch, turpentine and lumber. The western parts of the state produce tobacco, corn, and wheat, which find a market in Virginia and South-Carolina.

S O U T H - C A R O L I N A

Has North-Carolina on the north, the ocean on the east, Georgia on the south, and the Mississippi on the west.

The city of Charleston, the capital, contains about one thousand six hundred houses. It is situated between the two rivers, Ashly and Cooper, the confluence of which forms the harbor. It is regular and well built.

The land, more than one hundred miles from the sea, is level ; but it is generally good, and makes excellent rice and indigo. The high lands in the back country produce corn and wheat.

The principal article of exportation is rice ; of which sixty six thousand barrels were shipped in 1786. Indigo, deer skins and lumber, are also very considerable articles of trade.

A college has been lately established at Winnsborough, 130 miles from Charleston ; and a company of gentlemen have been incorporated, by the name of the "Mount Sion Society," for the purpose of promoting literature. Many gentlemen, however, both in Carolina and the other southern states, send their sons to Princeton College, or other northern universities ; and some to Europe.

G E O R G I A

Is the most southern of the United States. It is bounded by the river Savannah, which divides it from South-Carolina on the north ; by the ocean on the east ; by the river St. Mary's, which divides it from the Floridas, on the south ; and by the Mississippi on the west. Its extent on the sea shore is about one hundred and thirty miles, and from the ocean to the Mississippi about seven hundred miles. Its rivers are the Savannah, Ogechee, Altamaha, the two Satillas, Turtle river and St. Mary's.

Savannah, its principal town, is situated on the river of that name, seventeen miles from the sea, and contains about two hundred houses.

Augusta, situated at the head of the navigation on the same river, one hundred and thirty-four miles from the sea, is nearly the size of Savannah. It is the seat of government.

The principal exports of the state are lumber, rice, indigo, and tobacco. Georgia is also an excellent grazing country, and furnishes great quantities of beef. The land is fertile and the climate, in the highlands, very healthy.

Georgia is yet an infant settlement; but bids fair to be a populous and flourishing state, under the influence of its wise and liberal policy. The plan of a university lately adopted there, is novel; but seems calculated to produce the most salutary effects. The literary gentlemen throughout the state are combined, and incorporated for the purpose of superintending the literature of the state. They are to be governed by certain laws of their own making—and have the power of making such regulations as they think necessary respecting colleges, academies, and schools. An annual meeting of the whole society is to be held; in which laws shall be made, and degrees conferred upon such students in any of the academies, as shall be deemed qualified. A diploma entitles any citizen of the state to be a member of the university.

The design of the institution, is to render the system of education uniform, throughout the state; and to effect this purpose, the university determine that only one kind of books in any science, shall be used in all the academies, and schools in the state.

The funds of this institution are 40,000 acres of land; a thousand pounds in each county; with all the monies and lands granted for the support of schools before the revolution.

Such a plan of education, which excludes the principles of dissention, and combines the leading men of the state in the same society, constitutes the firmest basis of political and religious harmony.

V E R M O N T.

The tract of country called *Vermont*, has Connecticut river on the east, Massachusetts on the south, New-York and Lake Champlain on the west, and Canada on the north. It is about one hundred and fifty miles in length from north to south; and fifty in breadth from east to west. The right to it was, before the war, claimed both by New-Hampshire and New-York. When hostilities commenced between

Great-Britain and America, the inhabitants, considering themselves as in a state of nature, without government, and not within any legal jurisdiction, associated, and formed a constitution of civil government. Under this constitution they exercised all the powers of an independent sovereign state. Some attempts were made by New-York to prevent the establishment of their independence; and the claims of the contending parties were once submitted to Congress. But either thro neglect, jealousy, or design, in one or both parties, the question was not brought to a federal decision. But at the session of the Legislature of New-York, in July 1789, an act passed, appointing commissioners to acknowledge the independence of the state, and the terms of separation were agreed upon.

Vermont is rapidly settling by emigrations from the New-England states, as well as by natural population. Its present inhabitants may be one hundred thousand. Its soil is generally fertile; producing wheat, corn, and grass in abundance. It is covered with excellent timber. Its inhabitants are, as is common in new settlements, hardy and industrious; and during the late war, when the state was a frontier, they distinguished themselves by their bravery; particularly in the battle at Bennington. Its northwestern boundary is Lake Champlain, which communicates with the St. Lawrence. By this conveyance on the north, by Hudson's river, which is but twenty miles from the line, on the south-west, and by Connecticut river on the east, this state is supplied with foreign commodities, and finds a market for its own produce.

This state is divided by a large mountain, running from north to south, through the whole state, called the *Green Mountain*, which gives the state its name.*

Bennington, is a well built town on the western border of the state, and stands in an elevated situation.

Vermont conducted its military operations, during the war, independent of the United States—raised and paid its own troops—emitted and redeemed bills of credit, and paid its own debts.

ENGLISH PROVINCES.

Canada, on the north of the United States, is a large

* Vermont, a Green Mountain.

country, originally settled by the French, but conquered by the English, who have held possession of it ever since. The English governor resides at Quebec, a large well fortified town on the St. Lawrence. The principal articles of trade are furs and skins.

Nova Scotia belongs also to the English. It is generally a barren country, but commands the entrance into Canada, and affords many advantages in carrying on the fishery. The metropolis is Halifax.

SPANISH PROVINCES.

The two Floridas are Spanish provinces, on the south of the United States. They extend from the Atlantic to the Mississippi. St. Augustine, the capital of East Florida, lies upon the Atlantic; and Pensacola, the capital of West-Florida, is situated upon a small bay in the gulph of Mexico.

One of the Floridas was conquered and taken from the English by Spain, during the late war; and the other was given up by treaty, at the peace in 1783.

C H A P. XXV.

A SKETCH of the HISTORY of the late WAR in AMERICA.

THE attempts of the British parliament to raise a revenue in America, without her consent, occasioned the late war, which separated this country from Great-Britain.

The first attempt of consequence was the famous *Stamp Act*, March, 1765. By this, the Americans were obliged to make use of stamped paper, for all notes, bonds, and other legal instruments; on which paper a duty was to be paid.

This act occasioned such general uneasiness in America, that the parliament thought proper to repeal it, the year after it was made.

But the next year (1767) the *Tea Act* was framed, by which a heavy duty was laid upon tea, glass, paper, and many other articles, which were much used in America. This threw the colonies into confusion, and excited such resentment among the people, that the parliament, three years after, took off three fourths of the duty.

The duty was still disagreeable to the Americans, who entered into resolutions not to import and consume British manufactures.

A few years after (in 1773) the people of Boston, who were determined not to pay duties on tea, went on board some ships belonging to the East-India company, which lay in the harbor and threw all the tea overboard. In other parts of America, violent opposition was made to British taxation.

This opposition enkindled the resentment of the British parliament, which they expressed the next year (1774) by shutting the port of Boston, which ruined the trade of that flourishing town. This act was followed by others, by which the constitution of Massachusetts was new modelled, and the liberties of the people infringed.

These rash and cruel measures, gave great and universal alarm to the Americans. General Gage was sent to Boston, to enforce the new laws ; but he was received with coldness, and opposed with spirit in the execution of his commission.

The assemblies throughout America, remonstrated and petitioned. At the same time many contributions of money and provisions from every quarter, were sent to the inhabitants of Boston, who were suffering in consequence of the port-bill.

The same year, troops arrived in Boston, to enforce the wicked and unjust acts of the British parliament. Fortifications were erected on Boston neck, by order of General Gage ; and the ammunition and stores in Cambridge and Charlestown, were seized and secured.

In September, deputies from most of the colonies met in Congress at Philadelphia. These delegates approved of the conduct of the people of Massachusetts ; wrote a letter to General Gage ; published a declaration of rights ; formed an association not to import, or use British goods ; sent a petition to the king of Great-Britain ; an address to the inhabitants of that kingdom ; another to the inhabitants of Canada ; and another to the inhabitants of the colonies.

In the beginning of the next year (1775) was passed the *Fishery-Bill*, by which the northern colonies were forbid to fish on the banks of Newfoundland, for a certain time. This bore hard upon the commerce of these colonies, which was in a great measure supported by the fishery. Soon after, another bill was passed, which restrained the trade of the middle and southern colonies, to Great-Britain, Ireland, and the West-Indies, except under certain conditions. These repeated acts of oppression on the part of Great-Bri-

tain, alienated the affections of America from her parent and sovereign, and produced a combined opposition to the whole system of taxation.

Preparations began to be made, to oppose by force, the execution of these acts of parliament. The militia of the country were trained to the use of arms—great encouragement was given for the manufacture of gunpowder, and measures were taken to obtain all kinds of military stores.

In February, Colonel Leslie was sent with a detachment of troops from Boston, to take possession of some cannon at Salem. But the people had intelligence of the design—took up the draw-bridge in that town, and prevented the troops from passing, until the cannon were secured; so that the expedition failed.

In April, Colonel Smith, and Major Pitcairn, were sent with a body of troops, to destroy the military stores which had been collected at Concord, about twenty miles from Boston. At Lexington, the militia were collected on a green, to oppose the incursion of the British forces. These were fired upon by the British troops, and eight men killed on the spot.

The militia were dispersed, and the troops proceeded to Concord; where they destroyed a few stores. But on their return, they were incessantly harassed by the Americans, who inflamed with just resentment, fired upon them from houses and fences, and pursued them to Boston.

Here was spilt the *first blood* in the late war; a war which severed America from the British empire. *Lexington* opened the first scene of the great drama, which, in its progress, exhibited the most illustrious characters and events, and closed with a revolution, equally glorious for the actors, and important in its consequences to the human race.

This battle roused all America. The militia collected from all quarters, and Boston was, in a few days, besieged by twenty thousand men. A stop was put to all intercourse between the town and country, and the inhabitants were reduced to great want of provisions. General Gage promised to let the people depart, if they would deliver up their arms. The people complied, but when the General had obtained their arms, the perfidious wretch refused to let the people go.

In the mean time, a small number of men under the command of Colonel Allen, and Colonel Easton, without any

public orders, surprized and took the British garrison at Ticonderoga, without the loss of a man.

In June following, our troops attempted to fortify Bunker-hill, which lies in Charlestown, and but a mile and a half from Boston. They had, during the night, thrown up a small breast work, which sheltered them from the fire of the British cannon. But the next morning, the British army was sent to drive them from the hill, and landing under cover of their cannon, they set fire to Charleston, which was consumed, and marched to attack our troops in the entrenchments. A severe engagement ensued, in which the British suffered a very great loss, both of officers and privates. They were repulsed at first, and thrown into disorder; but they finally carried the fortification with the point of the bayonet. The Americans suffered a small loss, compared with the British; but the death of the brave General Warren, who fell in the action, a martyr to the cause of his country, was severely felt, and universally lamented.

About this time, the Continental Congress appointed George Washington, Esq. a native of Virginia, to the chief command of the American army. This gentleman had been a distinguished and successful officer in the preceding war, and he seemed destined by heaven to be the savior of his country. He accepted the appointment with a diffidence which was a proof of his prudence and his greatness. He refused any pay for eight years laborious and arduous service; and by his matchless skill, fortitude and perseverance, conducted America through indelible difficulties, to independence and peace. While true merit is esteemed, or virtue honored, mankind will never cease to revere the memory of this Hero; and while gratitude remains in the human breast, the praises of WASHINGTON shall dwell on every American tongue.

General Washington, with other officers appointed by Congress, arrived at Cambridge, and took command of the American army in July. From this time, the affairs of America began to assume the appearance of a regular and general opposition to the forces of Great-Britain.

In Autumn, a body of troops under the command of Gen. Montgomery, besieged and took the garrison at St. John's, which commands the entrance into Canada. The prisoners amounted to about seven hundred. Gen. Mont-

gomery pursued his success, and took Montreal ; and designed to push his victories to Quebec.

A body of troops, commanded by Arnold, was ordered to march to Canada, by the river Kennebek, and through the wilderness. After suffering every hardship, and the most distressing hunger, they arrived in Canada, and were joined by Gen. Montgomery, before Quebec. This city, which was commanded by Gov. Carleton, was immediately besieged. But there being little hope of taking the town by a siege, it was determined to storm it.

The attack was made on the last day of December, but proved unsuccessful, and fatal to the brave General, who with his aid, was killed in attempting to scale the walls.

Of the three divisions which attacked the town, one only entered, and that was obliged to surrender to superior force. After this defeat, Arnold, who now commanded the troops, continued some months before Quebec, altho his troops suffered incredibly by cold and sickness. But the next spring, the Americans were obliged to retreat from Canada.

About this time the large and flourishing town of Norfolk in Virginia, was wantonly burnt, by order of Lord Dunmore, the royal governor.

Gen. Gage went to England in September, and was succeeded in the command by General Howe.

Falmouth, a considerable town in the province of Main, in Massachusetts, shared the fate of Norfolk ; being laid in ashes by order of the British Admiral.

The British King entered into treaties with some of the German princes for about seventeen thousand men, who were to be sent to America the next year, to assist in subduing the colonies. The British parliament also passed an act, forbidding all intercourse with America ; and while they repealed the Boston port and fishery bills, they declared all American property on the high seas, forfeited to the captors. This act induced Congress to change the mode of carrying on the war ; and measures were taken to annoy the enemy in Boston. For this purpose, batteries were opened on several hills, from whence shot and bombs were thrown into the town. But the batteries which were opened on Dorchester point had the best effect, and soon obliged General Howe to abandon the town. In March, 1776, the British troops embarked for Halifax, and General Washington entered the town in triumph.

In the ensuing summer, a small squadron of ships commanded by Sir Peter Parker, and a body of troops under the Generals Clinton and Cornwallis, attempted to take Charleston, the capital of South-Carolina. The ships made a violent attack upon the fort on Sullivan's Island, but were repulsed with great loss, and the expedition was abandoned.

In July, Congress published their declaration of Independence, which for ever separated America from Great-Britain. This great event took place two hundred and eighty-four years after the first discovery of America by Columbus—one hundred and seventy, from the first effectual settlement in Virginia—and one hundred and fifty-six from the first settlement of Plymouth in Massachusetts, which were the earliest English settlements in America.

Just after this declaration, General Howe, with a powerful force, arrived near New-York; and landed the troops upon Staten Island. General Washington was in New-York with about thirteen thousand men, encamped either in the city or the neighboring fortifications.

The operations of the British began by the action on Long-Island, in the month of August. The Americans were defeated, and Gen. Sullivan and Lord Stirling, with a large body of men, were made prisoners. The night after the engagement, a retreat was ordered, and executed with such silence, that the Americans left the island without alarming their enemies, and without loss.

In September the city of New-York was abandoned by the American army, and taken by the British.

In November, Fort Washington, on York Island, was taken, and more than two thousand men made prisoners. Fort Lee, opposite to Fort Washington, on the Jersey shore, was soon after taken, but the garrison escaped.

About the same time, General Clinton was sent with a body of troops to take possession of Rhode-Island; and succeeded. In addition to all these losses and defeats, the American army suffered by desertion, and more by sickness, which was epidemic, and very mortal.

The northern army at Ticonderoga, was in a disagreeable situation, particularly after the battle on lake Champlain, in which the American force, consisting of a few light vessels, under the command of Arnold and General Waterbury, was totally dispersed. But General Carleton, instead of pursuing his victory, landed at Crown Point, reconnoitered

our posts at Ticonderoga and Mount Independence, and returned to winter quarters in Canada.

At the close of this year, the American army was dwindled to a handful of men ; and general Lee was taken prisoner in New-Jersey. Far from being discouraged at these losses, Congress took measures to raise and establish an army.

In this critical situation General Washington surprized and took a large body of Hessians, who were cantoned at Trenton ; and soon after, another body of the British troops, at Pinceton. The address in planning and executing these enterprizes, reflected the highest honor on the commander, and the success revived the desponding hopes of America. The loss of General Mercer, a gallant officer, at Princeton, was the principal circumstance that allayed the joys of victory.

The following year (1777) was distinguished by very memorable events, in favor of America. On the opening of the campaign, Governor Tryon was sent with a body of troops, to destroy the stores at Danbury, in Connecticut. This plan was executed, and the town mostly burnt. The enemy suffered in their retreat, and the Americans lost General Wooster, a brave and experienced officer.

General Prescott was taken from his quarters on Rhode-Island, by the address and enterptize of Colonel Barton, and conveyed prisoner to the continent.

General Burgoyne, who commanded the northern British army, took possession of Ticonderoga, which had been abandoned by the Americans. He pushed his successes, crossed Lake George, and encamped upon the banks of the Hudson, near Saratoga. His progress however was checked, by the defeat of Colonel Baum, near Benington, in which the undisciplined militia of Vermont, under General Stark, displayed unexampled bravery, and captured almost the whole detachment.

The militia assembled from all parts of New-England to stop the progress of General Burgoyne.

These, with the regular troops, formed a respectable army, commanded by General Gates. After two severe actions, in which the Generals Lincoln and Arnold, behaved with uncommon gallantry, and were wounded, General Burgoyne found himself enclosed with brave troops, and was forced to surrender his whole army, amounting to ten

thousand men, into the hands of the Americans. This happened in October.

This event diffused a universal joy over America, and laid a foundation for the treaty with France.

But before these transactions, the main body of the British forces had embarked at New-York, sailed up the Chesapeake, and landed at the head of Elk river. The army soon began their march for Philadelphia. General Washington had determined to oppose them, and for this purpose made a stand upon the heights, near Brandywine Creek. Here the armies engaged, and the Americans were overpowered, and suffered great loss. The enemy soon pursued their march and took possession of Philadelphia towards the close of September.

Not long after, the two armies were again engaged at Germantown, and in the beginning of the action, the Americans had the advantage; but by some unlucky accident, the fortune of the day was turned in favor of the British. Both sides suffered considerable losses; on the side of the Americans, was General Nash.

In an attack upon the forts at Mud-Island and Red Bank, the Hessians were unsuccessful, and their commander, Colonel Donop, killed. The British also lost the *Augusta*, a ship of the line. But the forts were afterwards taken, and the navigation of the Delaware opened. General Washington was reinforced, with part of the troops which had composed the northern army, under General Gates; and both armies retired to winter quarters.

In October the same month in which General Burgoyne was taken at Saratoga, General Vaughan, with a small fleet, sailed up Hudson's river, and wantonly burnt Kingston, a beautiful Dutch settlement, on the west side of the river.

The beginning of the next year, (1778) was distinguished by a treaty of Alliance between France and America; by which we obtained a powerful and generous ally. When the English ministry were informed that this treaty was on foot, they dispatched commissioners to America, to attempt a reconciliation. But America would not now accept their offers. Early in the spring, Count de Estaing, with a fleet of fifteen sail of the line, was sent by the court of France, to assist America.

General Howe left the army, and returned to England; the command then devolved upon Sir Henry Clinton. In

June the British army left Philadelphia, and marched for New-York. On their march they were annoyed by the Americans ; and at Monmouth, a very regular action took place, between part of the armies ; the enemy was repulsed with great loss ; and had General Lee obeyed his orders, a signal victory must have been obtained. General Lee, for his ill conduct that day, was suspended, and was never afterwards permitted to join the army.

In August, General Sullivan, with a large body of troops, attempted to take possession of Rhode-Island, but did not succeed. Soon after, the stores and shipping at Bedford, in Massachusetts, were burnt by a party of the British troops. The same year, Savannah, the capital of Georgia, was taken by the British, under the command of Colonel Campbell.

In the following year (1779) General Lincoln was appointed to the command of the southern army.

Governor Tryon and Sir George Collier made an incursion into Connecticut, and burnt, with wanton barbarity, the towns of Fairfield and Norwalk. But the American arms were crowned with success, in a bold attack upon Stony Point, which was surprized and taken by General Wayne, in the night of the 15th of July. Five hundred men were made prisoners, with a small loss on either side.

A party of British forces attempted this summer, to build a fort on Penobscot river, for the purpose of cutting timber in the neighboring forests. A plan was laid, by Massachusetts, to dislodge them, and a considerable fleet collected for the purpose. But the plan failed of success, and the whole marine force fell into the hands of the British, except some vessels, which were burnt by the Americans themselves.

In October, General Lincoln and Count de Estaing made an assault upon Savannah ; but they were repulsed with considerable loss. In this action, the celebrated Polish Count Pulaski, who had acquired the reputation of a brave soldier, was mortally wounded.

In this summer, General Sullivan marched with a body of troops, into the Indian country, and burnt and destroyed all their provisions and settlements, that fell in their way.

On the opening of the campaign, the next year (1780) the British troops left Rhode-Island. An expedition under General Clinton and Lord Cornwallis, was undertaken against Charleston, South-Carolina, where General Lincoln commanded. This town, after a close siege of about six

weeks, was surrendered to the British commander; and General Lincoln, and the whole American garrison, were made prisoners.

General Gates was appointed to the command in the southern department, and another army collected. In August, Lord Cornwallis attacked the American troops, at Camden, in South-Carolina, and routed them with considerable loss. He afterwards marched thro the southern states, and subdued them entirely subdued.

The same summer, the British troops made frequent incursions from New-York into the Jerseys; ravaging and plundering the country. In some of these descents, the Rev. Mr. Caldwell, a respectable clergyman and warm patriot, and his lady, were inhumanly murdered by the savage soldiery.

In July, a French fleet, under Monsieur de Ternay, with a body of land forces, commanded by Count de Rochambeau, arrived at Rhode-Island, to the great joy of the Americans. This year was also distinguished by the infamous treason of Arnold. General Washington having some business to transact at Wethersfield, in Connecticut, left Arnold to command the important post of West-Point, which guards a pass in Hudson's river, about sixty miles from New-York. Arnold's conduct in the city of Philadelphia, the preceding winter, had been censured; and the treatment he received in consequence, had given him offence.

He determined to take revenge; and for this purpose, he entered into a negociation with Sir Henry Clinton, to deliver West-Point, and the army, into the hands of the British. While General Washington was absent, he dismounted the cannon in some of the forts, and took other steps to render the taking of the post easy for the enemy.

But by a providential discovery, the whole plan was defeated. Major Andre, aid to General Clinton, a brave officer, who had been sent up the river as a spy, to concert the plan of operations with Arnold, was taken, condemned by a court martial, and executed. Arnold made his escape, by getting on board the Vulture, a British vessel which lay in the river. His conduct has stamped him with infamy; and, like all traitors, he is despised by all mankind. General Washington arrived in camp just after Arnold had made his escape, and restored order in the garrison.

After the defeat of General Gates, in Carolina, General

Greene was appointed to the command in the southern department. From this period, things in that quarter wore a more favorable aspect. Colonel Tarleton, the active commander of the British legion, was defeated by General Morgan, the intrepid commander of the rifle men.

After a variety of movements, the two armies met at Guilford, in North-Carolina. Here was one of the best fought actions during the war. General Greene and Lord Cornwallis exerted themselves at the head of their respective armies, and altho the Americans were obliged to retire from the field of battle, yet the British army suffered an immense loss, and could not pursue the victory. This action happened on the 15th of March, 1781.

In the spring, Arnold, who was made a Brigadier General in the British service, with a small number of troops, sailed for Virginia, and plundered the country. This called the attention of the French fleet to that quarter and a naval engagement took place between the English and French, in which some of the English ships were much damaged, and one entirely disabled.

After the battle at Guilford, General Greene moved towards South-Carolina, to drive the British from their posts in that state. Here Lord Rawdon obtained an inconsiderable advantage over the Americans, near Camden. But General Greene more than recovered this disadvantage, by the brilliant and successful action at the Eutaw Springs; where General Marion distinguished himself, and the brave Colonel Washington was wounded and taken prisoner.

Lord Cornwallis, finding General Greene successful in Carolina, marched to Virginia, collected his forces, and fortified himself in Yorktown. In the mean time Arnold made an incursion into Connecticut, burnt a part of New-London, took Fort Griswold by storm, and put the garrison to the sword. The garrison consisted chiefly of men suddenly collected from the little town of Groton, which by the savage cruelty of the British officer who commanded the attack, lost in one hour, almost all its heads of families. The brave Colonel Ledyard, who commanded the fort, was slain with his own sword, after he had surrendered.

The Marquis de la Fayette, the brave and generous nobleman, whose services command the gratitude of every Ameri-

can, had been dispatched from the main army, to watch the motions of Lord Cornwallis in Virginia.

About the last of August, Count de Grasse arrived with a large fleet in the Chesapeek, and blocked up the British troops at Yorktown. Admiral Greaves, with a British fleet, appeared off the Capes, and an action succeeded ; but it was not decisive.

General Washington had, before this time, moved the main body of his army together with the French troops, to the southward ; and as soon as he heard of the arrival of the French fleet in the Chesapeek, he made rapid marches to the head of Elk, where embarking, the troops soon arrived at Yorktown.

A close siege immediately commenced, and was carried on with such vigor, by the combined forces of America, and France, that Lord Cornwallis was obliged to surrender. This glorious event, which took place on the 19th of October, 1781, decided the contest in favor of America, and laid the foundation of a general peace.

A few months after the surrender of Cornwallis, the British evacuated all their posts in South-Carolina and Georgia, and retired to the main army in New-York.

The next spring (1782) Sir Guy Carleton arrived in New-York, and took command of the British army in America. Immediately after his arrival, he acquainted General Washington and Congress, that negotiations for a peace had been commenced at Paris.

On the 30th of November 1782, the provisional articles of peace were signed at Paris, by which Great-Britain acknowledged the independence and sovereignty of the United States of America.

Thus ended a long and arduous conflict, in which Great-Britain expended near a hundred millions of money, with an hundred thousand lives, and won nothing. America endured every cruelty and distress from her enemies ; lost many lives and much treasure—but delivered herself from a foreign dominion, and gained a rank among the nations of the earth.

LESSONS IN SPEAKING.

ORATION, *delivered at Boston, March 5, 1772, by Dr. JOSEPH WARREN; in commemoration of the evening of the fifth of March, 1770; when a number of citizens were killed by a party of the British troops, quartered among them in a time of peace.*

WHEN we turn over the historic page, and trace the rise and fall of States and Empires; the mighty revolutions which have so often varied the face of the world, strike our minds with solemn surprize, and we are naturally led to search for the causes of such astonishing changes.

That man is formed for *social life*, is an observation, which upon our first enquiry, presents itself to our view. Government has its origin in the *weakness* of individuals, and hath for its end, the *strength* and *security* of all; and so long as the means of effecting this important end, are thoroughly known, and religiously attended to, government is one of the richest blessings to mankind, and ought to be held in the highest veneration.

In young and new-formed communities, the grand design of this institution, is most generally understood, and most strictly regarded; the motives which urged to the social compact, cannot be at once forgotten, and *that* equality which is remembered to have subsisted so lately among them, prevents those who are clothed with authority from attempting to invade the freedom of their brethren; or, if such an attempt is made, it prevents the community from suffering the offender to go unpunished. Every member feels it to be his interest, and knows it to be his duty, to preserve inviolate the constitution on which the public safety depends, and is equally ready to assist the *magistrate* in the execution of the laws, and the *subject* in the defence of his right. So long as the noble attachment to a constitution, founded on free and benevolent principles, exists in full vigor, in any state, that state must be flourishing and happy.

It was this noble attachment to a free constitution which saved ancient Rome from the smallest beginnings, to that

bright summit of happiness and glory to which she arrived; and it was the loss of *this* which plunged her from *that* summit into the black gulf of infamy and slavery. It was *this* attachment which inspired her senators with wisdom; it was *this* which glowed in the breasts of her heroes; it was *this* which guarded her liberties, and extended her dominions, gave peace at home, and commanded respect abroad: and when *this* decayed, her magistrates lost their reverence for justice and laws, and degenerated into tyrants and oppressors—her senators, forgetful of their dignity, and seduced by base corruption, betrayed their country—her soldiers, regardless of their relation to the community, and urged *only* by the hopes of plunder and rapine, unfeelingly committed the most flagrant enormities; and hired to the trade of death, with relentless fury they perpetrated the most cruel murders; by which the streets of imperial Rome were drenched with her *noblest* blood. Thus *this empress* of the world lost her dominions abroad, and her inhabitants, dissolute in their manners, at length became contented *slaves*; and she stands to this day, the scorn and derision of nations, and a monument of this eternal truth, that *public happiness depends on a virtuous and unshaken attachment to a free constitution.*

It was *this* attachment to a constitution, founded on free and benevolent principles, which inspired the first settlers of this country:—they saw with grief the daring outrages committed on the free constitution of their native land—they knew that nothing but a civil war could at that time restore its pristine purity. So hard was it to resolve to embrace their hands in the *blood* of their brethren, that they chose rather to quit their fair possessions, and seek another habitation in a distant clime. When they came to this new world, which they fairly purchased of the Indian natives, the only rightful proprietors, they cultivated the then barren soil, by their incessant labor, and defended their dear-bought possessions with the fortitude of the christian, and the bravery of the hero.

After various struggles, which, during the tyrannic reigns of the house of STUART, were constantly maintained between right and wrong, between liberty and slavery, the connection between Great-Britain and this colony was settled in the reign of King William and Queen Mary, by a compact, the conditions of which, were expressed in a charter; by which all the liberties and immunities of British

subjects, were secured to this province, as fully, and as absolutely as they possibly could be by any human instrument which can be devised. It is undeniably true, that the greatest and most important right of a British subject is, that *he shall be governed by no laws but those to which he, either in person or by his representative, hath given his consent* : and this I will venture to assert is the grand basis of British freedom : it is interwoven with the constitution ; and whenever this is lost, the constitution must be destroyed.

Let us now allow ourselves a few moments to examine the *late acts of the British parliament for taxing America*.—Let us with candor judge whether they are constitutionally binding upon us :—if they are, *in the name of justice*, let us submit to them without one murmuring word.

First, I would ask, whether the members of the British House of Commons, are the democracy of this province ? If they are, they are either the people of this province, or are elected by the people of this province, to represent them, and have therefore a constitutional right to originate a bill for taxing them ; it is most certain they are neither ; and therefore nothing done by *them* can be said to be done by the democratic branch of our constitution. I would next ask, whether the lords, who compose the aristocratic branch of the legislature, are peers of America ? I never heard it was (even in these extraordinary times) so much as pretended, and if they are not, certainly no act of *theirs* can be said to be the act of the aristocratic branch of our constitution. The power of the monarchic branch we with pleasure acknowledge, resides in the king, who may act either in person or by his representative ; and I freely confess that I can see no reason why a PROCLAMATION for raising money in America, issued by the king's sole authority, would not be equally consistent with our constitution, and therefore equally binding upon us with the *late acts of the British parliament for taxing us*. For it is plain, that if there is any validity in *those acts*, it must arise altogether from the monarchic branch of the legislature. And I further think, that it would be at least as equitable ; for I do not conceive it to be of the least importance to us by *whom* our property is taken away, so long as it is taken without our consent. I am very much at a loss to know by what figure of rhetoric, the inhabitants of this province can be called *free subjects*,

when they are obliged to obey implicitly, such laws as are made for them by men three thousand miles off, whom they know not, and whom they never have empowered to act for them; or how they can be said to have *property*, when a body of men, over whom they have not the least controul, and who are not in any way accountable to them, shall oblige them to deliver up any part, or the whole of their substance, without even asking their consent. And yet, whoever pretends that the late acts of the British parliament for taxing America, ought to be deemed binding upon us, must admit at once that we are absolute SLAVES and have no property of our own; or else that we may be FREEMEN, and at the same time, under the necessity of obeying the *arbitrary commands of those* over whom we have no controul nor influence; and that we may *have property of our own*, which is entirely at the disposal of another. Such gross absurdities, I believe will not be relished in this enlightened age; and it can be no matter of wonder, that the people quickly perceived, and seriously complained of the inroads which these acts must unavoidably make upon their *liberty*, and of the hazard to which their *whole property* is by them exposed; for if they may be taxed without their consent, even in the smallest trifle, they may also, without their consent, be deprived of every thing they possess, although ever so valuable, ever so dear. Certainly it never entered the hearts of our ancestors, that after so many dangers in this then desolate wilderness, their hard-earned property should be at the disposal of the British parliament. And as it was soon found that this taxation could not be supported by reason and argument, it seemed necessary that one act of oppression should be enforced by another, and therefore contrary to our just rights as possessing, or at least having a just title to possess, all the *liberties and immunities* of British subjects, a standing army was established among us in a time of peace; and evidently for the purpose of affecting *that*, which it was one principal design of the founders of the constitution to prevent (when they declared a standing army in a time of peace to be *against law*) namely, for the enforcement of obedience to acts, which, upon fair examination, appeared to be unjust and unconstitutional.

The ruinous consequences of standing armies to free communities, may be seen in the histories of *Syracuse, Rome*, and many other once flourishing *States*; some of which have

now scarce a name ! Their baneful influence is most suddenly felt, when they are placed in populous cities ; for, by a corruption of morals, the public happiness is immediately affected. That this is one of the effects of quartering troops in a populous city, is a truth, to which many a mourning parent, many a lost despairing child in this metropolis, must bear a very melancholy testimony. Soldiers are also taught to consider arms as the only arbiters by which every dispute is to be decided between contending states ; they are instructed *implicitly* to obey their commanders, without enquiring into the justice of the cause they are engaged to support. Hence it is that they are ever to be dreaded as the ready engines of tyranny and oppression. And it is too observable that they are prone to introduce the same mode of decision in the disputes of individuals, and from thence have often arisen great animosities between *them* and *the inhabitants*, who, whilst in a naked defenceless state, are frequently insulted and abused by an armed soldiery. And this will be more especially the case, when the troops are informed that the intention of their being stationed in any city is to *overawe the inhabitants*. That this was the avowed design of stationing an armed force in this town, is sufficiently known ; and *we*, my fellow-citizens, have seen, *we* have felt the tragical effects. *The FATAL FIFTH OF MARCH, 1770, can never be forgotten*—The horrors of *that dreadful night* are but too deeply impressed on our hearts—Language is too feeble to paint the emotions of our souls, when our streets were stained with the *blood of our brethren*—when our ears were wounded by the groans of the *dying*, and our eyes were tormented with the sight of the mangled bodies of the *dead*. When our alarmed imagination presented to our view our houses wrapt in flames—our children subjected to the barbarous caprice of the raging soldiery—our beauteous virgins exposed to all the insolence of unbridled passion—our virtuous wives, endeared to us by every tender tie, falling a sacrifice to worse than brutal violence, and perhaps, like the famed *Lucretia*, distracted with anguish and despair, ending their wretched lives by their own fair hands—When we beheld the authors of our distress parading in our streets, or drawn up in regular *battalia*, as tho in a hostile city, our hearts beat to arms ; we snatched our weapons, almost resolved, by one decisive stroke, to avenge the death of our *slaughtered brethren*, and to secure from future danger, all

that we held most dear ; but propitious heaven forbad the bloody carnage, and saved the threatened victims of our too keen resentment, not by their discipline, not by their regular array—no, it was royal *Georges's* livery that proved their shield—it was that which turned the pointed engines of destruction from their breasts. The thoughts of vengeance were soon buried in our inbred affection to Great-Britain, and calm reason dictated a method of removing the troops, more mild than an immediate recourse to the sword. With united efforts you urged the immediate departure of the troops from the town—you urged it with a resolution which ensured success—you obtained your wishes, and the removal of the troops were effected, without one drop of *their blood* being shed by the inhabitants.

The immediate actors in the tragedy of *that night* were surrendered to justice. It is not mine to say how far they were guilty ! They have been tried by the country and **ACQUITTED** of murder ; and they are not again to be arraigned at an earthly bar ; but surely the men who have promiscuously scattered *death* amidst the *innocent* inhabitants of a populous city, ought to see well to it, that they be prepared to stand at the bar of an omniscient Judge ! and all who contrived or encouraged the stationing of troops in this place, have reasons of eternal importance, to reflect with deep contrition, on their base designs, and humbly to repent of their impious machinations.

The voice of your fathers' blood cries to you from the ground—*My sons, scorn to be SLAVES !* In vain, we met the frowns of tyrants—in vain we crossed the boisterous ocean, found a new world, and prepared it for the happy residence of *Liberty*—in vain we toiled—in vain we fought—we bled in vain, if you, our offspring, want valor to repel the assaults of her invaders !—Stain not the glory of your worthy ancestors, but like them resolve never to part with your birthright ; be wise in your deliberations, and determined in your exertions for the preservation of your liberty. Follow not the dictates of passion, but enlist yourselves under the sacred banner of reason ; use every method in your power to secure your rights ; at least prevent the curses of posterity from being heaped upon your memories.

If you, with united zeal and fortitude, oppose the torrent of oppression ; if you feel the true fire of patriotism burning in your breasts ; if you, from your souls, despise

the most gaudy dress that slavery can wear; if you really prefer the lonely cottage (whilst blest with liberty) to gilded palaces surrounded with the ensigns of slavery, you may have the fullest assurance that tyranny, with her whole accursed train, will hide her hideous head, in confusion, shame and despair. If you perform your part, you must have the strongest confidence, that *the same Almighty Being*, who protected your pious and venerable forefathers, who enabled them to turn a barren wilderness into a fruitful field, who so often *made bare his arm* for their salvation, will still be mindful of you their offspring.

May this ALMIGHTY BEING graciously preside in all our councils—May he direct us to such measures as he himself shall approve, and be pleased to bless. *May we ever be favored of GOD.*—May our land be a land of liberty, the seat of virtue, the asylum of the oppressed, *a name and a praise in the whole earth*, until the last shock of time shall bury the empires of the world in undistinguished ruin!

ORATION, delivered at Boston, March 5, 1774, by the honorable JOHN HANCOCK, Esq. in commemoration of the evening of the fifth of March, 1770; when a number of the citizens were killed by a party of the British troops, quartered among them, in a time of peace.

MEN, BRETHREN, FATHERS, and FELLOW COUNTRYMEN!

THE attentive gravity; the venerable appearance of this crowded audience; the dignity which I behold in the countenances of so many in this great assembly; the solemnity of the occasion upon which we have met together, joined to a consideration of the part I am to take in the important business of this day, fill me with an awe hitherto unknown; and heighten the sense which I have ever had, of my unworthiness to fill this sacred desk. But, allured by the call of some of my respected fellow citizens, with whose request it is always my greatest pleasure to comply, I almost forgot my want of ability to perform what they required. In this situation I find my only support, in assuring myself that a generous people will not severely censure what they know was well intended, tho' its want of meri

should prevent their being able to applaud it. And I pray, that my sincere attachment to the interest of my country, and my hearty detestation of every design formed against her liberties, may be admitted as some apology for my appearance in this place.

I have always, from my earliest youth, rejoiced in the felicity of my fellow men; and have ever considered it as the indispensable duty of every member of society to promote, as far as in him lies, the prosperity of every individual, but more especially of the community to which he belongs; and also as a faithful subject of the state, to use his utmost endeavors to detect, and having detected, strenuously to oppose every traiterous plot which its enemies may devise for its destruction. Security to the persons and properties of the governed, is so obviously the design and end of civil government, that to attempt a logical proof of it, would be like burning tapers at noon day, to assist the sun in enlightening the world. It cannot be either virtuous or honorable, to attempt to support a government, of which this is not the great and principal basis; and it is to the last degree vicious and infamous to attempt to support a government, which manifestly tends to render the persons and properties of the governed insecure. Some boast of being *friends to government*; I am a friend to *righteous* government, to a government founded upon the principles of reason and justice; but I glory in publicly avowing my eternal enmity to tyranny. Is the present system which the British administration have adopted for the government of the colonies, a righteous government? Or is it tyranny?—Here suffer me to ask (and would to heaven there could be an answer) what tenderness, what regard, respect, or consideration has *Great-Britain* shewn, in their late transactions, for the security of the persons or properties of the inhabitants of the colonies? or rather, what have they omitted doing to destroy that security? They have declared that they have, ever had, and of right ought ever to have, full power to make laws of sufficient validity to bind the colonies in all cases whatever: They have exercised this pretended right, by imposing a tax upon us without our consent; and lest we should shew some reluctance at parting with our property, her fleets and armies are sent to support their mad pretensions. The town of Boston, ever faithful to the British crown, has been invested by a British fleet: The troops of George the III^d. have

crossed the wide Atlantic, not to engage an enemy, but to assist a band of *Traitors*, in trampling on the rights and liberties of his most loyal subjects, in America—those rights and liberties which, as a father, he ought ever to regard, and as a king, he is bound, in honor, to defend from violation, even at the risk of his own life.

Let not the history of the illustrious house of Brunswick inform posterity, that a king, descended from that glorious monarch George the II^d. once sent his British subjects to conquer and enslave his subjects in America? but be perpetual infamy entailed upon that villain who dared to advise his master to such execrable measures; for it was easy to foresee the consequences which so naturally followed upon sending troops into America, to enforce obedience to acts of the British parliament, which neither God nor man ever empowered them to make. It was reasonable to expect that troops, who knew the errand they were sent upon, would treat the people whom they were to subjugate, with cruelty and haughtiness, which too often buries the honorable character of a *soldier*, in the disgraceful name of an *unfeeling ruffian*. The troops, upon their first arrival, took possession of our Senate-House, and pointed their cannon against the judgement hall, and even continued them there, whilst the supreme court of judicature for this province was actually sitting, to decide upon the lives and fortunes of the king's subjects. Our streets nightly resounded with the noise of riot and debauchery; our peaceful citizens were hourly exposed to shameful insults, and often felt the effects of their violence and outrage.—But this was not all! as though they thought it not enough to violate our civil rights, they endeavored to deprive us of the enjoyment of our religious privileges; to viciate our morals, and thereby render us deserving of destruction. Hence, the rude din of arms, which broke in upon your solemn devotions in your temples, on that day hallowed by Heaven, and set apart by God himself, for his peculiar worship. Hence, impious oaths and blasphemies so often tortured your unaccustomed ear. Hence, all the arts which idleness and luxury could invent, were used to betray our youth of one sex, into extravagance and effeminacy, and of the other, into infamy and ruin; and did they not but succeed to well? Did not a reverence for religion sensibly decay? Did not our infants almost learn to lisp out curses before they knew their horrid

import ? Did not our youth forget they were Americans, and, regardless of the admonitions of the wise and aged, fervilely copy from their tyrants, vices which finally must overthrow the empire of Great-Britain ? and must I be impelled to acknowledge, that even the noblest, fairest part of all the lower creation, did not entirely escape the cursed snare ; When virtue has once erected her throne within the female breast, it is upon so solid a basis that nothing is able to expel the heavenly inhabitant. But have there not been some, few indeed, I hope, whose youth and inexperience have rendered them a prey to wretches, whom upon the least reflection, they would have despised and hated, as foes to God and their country ? I fear there have been some such unhappy instances ; or why have I seen an honest father clothed with shame ; or why a virtuous mother drowned in tears ?

But I forbear, and come reluctantly to the transactions of that dismal night, when in such quick succession we felt the extremes of grief, astonishment and rage ; when Heaven in anger, for a dreadful moment, suffered hell to take the reigns ; when Satan with his chosen band opened the sluices of New-England's blood, and sacrilegiously polluted our land with the dead bodies of her guiltless sons. Let this sad tale of death never be told without a tear : Let not the heaving bosom cease to burn with a manly indignation at the barbarous story, thro' the long tracts of future time : Let every parent tell the shameful story to his listening children, till tears of pity glisten in their eyes, and boiling passion shake their tender frames ; and whilst the anniversary of that ill-fated night, is kept a jubilee in the grim court of pandæmonium, let all America join in one common prayer to Heaven, that the inhuman, unprovoked murders of the fifth of March, 1770, planned by Hillsborough, and a knot of treacherous knaves in Boston, and executed by the cruel hand of Preston and his sanguinary coadjutors, may ever stand on history without a parallel. But what, my countrymen, withheld the ready arm of vengeance, from executing instant justice on the vile assassins ? Perhaps you feared promiscuous carnage might ensue, and that the innocent might share the fate of those who had performed the infernal deed. But were not all guilty ? were you not too tender of the lives of those who came to fix a yoke on your necks ? but I must not too severely blame a fault, which great souls only can commit. May

that magnificence of spirit which scorns the low pursuits of malice ; may that generous compassion which often preserves from ruin, even a guilty villain, forever actuate the noble bosoms of Americans.—But let not the miscreant host vainly imagine that we feared their arms. No, them we despised ; we dread nothing but slavery. Death is the creature of a Poltron's brain ; 'tis immortality to sacrifice ourselves for the salvation of our country. We fear not death. That gloomy night, the pale faced moon, and the affrighted stars that hurried thro the sky, can witness that we fear not death. Our hearts, which at the recollection, glow with a rage that four revolving years have scarcely taught us to restrain, can witness that we fear not death : and happy it is for those who dared to insult, that their naked bones are not now piled up an everlasting monument of Massachusetts bravery. But they retired, they fled, and in that flight they found their only safety. We then expected that the hand of public justice would soon inflict that punishment upon the murderers, which, by the laws of God and man they had merited. But let the unbiaſſed pen of a Robertson, or perhaps of some equally famed American, conduct this trial before the great tribunal of succeeding generations. And though the murderers may escape the just resentment of an enraged people ; though drowsy justice, intoxicated by the poisonous draught prepared for her cup, still nods upon her rotten seat, yet be assured, such complicated crimes will meet their due reward. Tell me, ye bloody butchers ! ye villains high and low ! ye wretches who contrived, as well as you who executed the inhuman deed ! do you not feel the goads and stings of conscious guilt, pierce through your savage bosoms ? tho some of you may think yourselves exalted to a height that bids defiance to the arms of human justice, and others shroud yourselves beneath the mask of hypocrisy, and build your hopes of safety on the low arts of cunning, chicanery, and falsehood ; yet, do you not sometimes feel the knawings of that worm which never dies ? Do not the injured shades of Maverick, Gray, Caldwell, Attucks, and Carr,* attend you in your solitary walks, arrest you even in the midst of your debaucheries, and fill even your dreams with terror ? but if the unappeased manes of the dead should not disturb their murderers, yet surely even

* Persons slain on the fifth of March, 1770.

your obdurate hearts must shrink, and your guilty blood must chill within your rigid veins, when you behold the miserable Monk, the wretched victim of your savage cruelty. Observe his tottering knees which scarce sustain his wasted body ; look on his haggard eyes ; mark well the death-like paleness of his fallen cheek, and tell me, does not the sight plant daggers in your souls. Unhappy Monk ! cut off in the gay morn of manhood, from all the joys which sweeten life, doomed to drag on a pitiful existence, without even a hope to taste the pleasures of returning health ! Yet Monk, thou livest not in vain ; thou livest a warning to thy country, which sympathizes with thee in thy sufferings ; thou livest an affecting, an alarming instance of the unbounded violence which lust of power, assisted by a standing army, can lead a traitor to commit.

For us he bleat, and now languishes. The wounds by which he is tortured to a lingering death, were aimed at our country ! surely meek-eyed charity can never behold such sufferings with indifference. Nor can her lenient hand forbear to pour oil and wine into these wounds ; and to assuage at least, what it cannot heal.

Patriotism is ever united with humanity and compassion. This noble affection, which impels us to sacrifice every thing dear, even life itself, to our country, involves in it a common sympathy and tenderness for every citizen, and must ever have a *particular feeling* for one who suffers in a public cause. Thoroughly persuaded of this, I need not add a word to engage your compassion and bounty towards a fellow citizen, who, with long protracted anguish, falls a victim to the relentless rage of our common enemies.

Ye dark designing knaves, ye murderers, parricides ! how dare you tread upon the earth, which has drank in the blood of slaughtered innocents, shed by your wicked hands ? how dare you breathe that air which wasted to the ear of heaven, the groans of those who fell a sacrifice to your accursed ambition ? but if the laboring earth doth not expand her jaws ; if the air you breathe is not commissioned to be the minister of death ; yet hear it and tremble ! the eye of heaven penetrates the darkest chambers of the soul, traces the leading clue through all the labyrinths which your industrious folly had devised ; and you, however you may have screened yourselves from human eyes, must be arraigned, must lift your hands red with the blood of those whose death you have procured, at the tremendous bar of God.

The first PETITION of CONGRESS to the KING, in 1774.

MOST GRACIOUS SOVEREIGN,

WE, your Majesty's faithful subjects of the colonies of New-Hampshire, Massachusetts-Bay, Rhode-Island and Providence Plantations, Connecticut, New-York, New-Jersey, Pennsylvania, the counties of New-Castle, Kent and Sussex, on Delaware, Maryland, Virginia, North-Carolina and South-Carolina, in behalf of ourselves and the inhabitants of these colonies, who have deputed us to represent them in general Congress, by this our humble petition, beg leave to lay our grievances before the throne.

A standing army has been kept in these colonies ever since the conclusion of the late war, without the consent of our assemblies; and this army, with a considerable naval armament, has been employed to enforce the collection of taxes.

The authority of the commander in chief, and under him of the brigadiers-generals, has, in time of peace, been rendered supreme in all the civil governments of America.

The commander in chief of all your majesty's forces in North-America, has, in time of peace, been appointed governor of a colony.

The charges of usual offices have been greatly increased; and new, expensive and oppressive offices have been multiplied.

The judges of admiralty and vice-admiralty courts are empowered to receive their salaries and fees, from the effects condemned by themselves.

The officers of the customs are empowered to break open and enter houses, without the authority of any civil magistrate, founded on legal information.

The judges of courts of common law have been made entirely dependent on one part of the legislature for their salaries, as well as for the duration of their commissions.

Counsellors holding commissions during pleasure, exercise legislative authority.

Humble and reasonable petitions from the representatives of the people have been fruitless.

The agents of the people have been discountenanced, and governors have been instructed to prevent the payment of their salaries.

Assemblies have been repeatedly and injuriously dissolved.

Commerce has been burdened with many useless and oppressive restrictions.

By several acts of parliament made in the fourth, fifth, sixth, seventh and eighth years of your majesty's reign, duties are imposed on us for the purpose of raising a revenue : and the powers of admiralty and vice admiralty courts are extended beyond their ancient limits ; whereby our property is taken from us without our consent, the trial by jury in many civil cases is abolished, enormous forfeitures are incurred for slight offences, vexatious informers are exempted from paying damages, to which they are justly liable, and oppressive security is required from owners, before they are allowed to defend their right.

Both houses of parliament have resolved that colonists may be tried in England for offences alledged to have been committed in America, by virtue of a statute passed in the thirty-fifth year of Henry the eighth ; and in consequence thereof attempts have been made to enforce that statute.

A statute was passed in the twelfth year of your majesty's reign, directing that persons charged with committing any offence therein described, in any place out of the realm, may be indicted and tried for the same, in any shire or county within the realm, whereby inhabitants of these colonies may, in sundry cases by that statute made capital, be deprived of a trial by their peers of the vicinage.

In the last session of Parliament an act was passed for blocking up the harbor of Boston ; another, empowering the Governor of the Massachusetts-Bay to send persons, indicted for murder in that province, to another colony, or even to Great-Britain for trial, whereby such offenders may escape legal punishment ; a third, for altering the chartered constitution of government in that province ; and a fourth, for extending the limits of Quebec, abolishing the English, and restoring the French laws, whereby great numbers of British freemen are subjected to the latter, and establishing an absolute government, and the Roman Catholic religion, throughout those vast regions that border on the westerly and northerly boundaries of the free, Protestant, English settlements ; and a fifth, for the better providing suitable quarters for officers and soldiers in his majesty's service in North-America.

To a sovereign who glories in the name of Briton, the bare recital of these acts, must, we presume, justify the loyal

subjects, who fly to the foot of the throne, and implore his clemency for protection against them.

From this destructive system of colony-administration, adopted since the conclusion of the last war, have flowed those distresses, dangers, fears and jealousies, that overwhelm your majesty's dutiful colonists with affliction. And we defy our most subtle and inveterate enemies to trace the unhappy differences between Great-Britain and these colonies from an earlier period, or from other causes than we have assigned. Had they proceeded on our part from a restless levity of temper, unjust impulses of ambition, or artful suggestions of seditious persons, we should merit the opprobrious terms frequently bestowed upon us by those we revere. But so far from promoting innovations, we have only opposed them; and can be charged with no offence, unless it be one to receive injuries and be sensible of them.

Had our Creator been pleased to give us existence in a land of slavery, the sense of our condition might have been mitigated by ignorance and habit. But thanks be to his adorable goodness, we are born the heirs of freedom, and ever enjoyed our right under the auspices of your royal ancestors, whose family was seated on the British throne to rescue and secure a pious and gallant nation from the popery and despotism of a superstitious and inexorable tyrant. Your majesty, we are confident, justly rejoices, that your title to the crown is thus founded on the title of your people to liberty; and therefore we doubt not but your royal wisdom must approve the sensibility, that teaches your subjects anxiously to guard the blessings they received from divine Providence, and thereby to prove the performance of that compact, which elevated the illustrious house of Brunswick to the imperial dignity it now possesses.

The apprehension of being degraded into a state of servitude, from the preeminent rank of English freemen, while our minds retain the strongest love of liberty, and clearly foresee the miseries preparing for us and our posterity, excites emotions in our breasts, which though we cannot describe, we should not wish to conceal. Feeling as men, and thinking as subjects, in the manner we do, silence would be disloyalty. By giving this faithful information, we do all in our power to promote the great objects of your royal

cares, the tranquility of your government, and the welfare of your people.

Duty to your majesty, and regard for the preservation of ourselves and our posterity, the primary obligations of nature and society, command us to entreat your royal attention ; and as your majesty enjoys the signal distinction of reigning over freemen, we apprehend the language of freemen cannot be displeasing. Your royal indignation, we hope, will rather fall on those designing and dangerous men, who, daringly interposing themselves between your royal person and your faithful subjects, and for several years past incessantly employed to dissolve the bonds of society, by abusing your majesty's authority, misrepresenting your American subjects, and prosecuting the most desperate and irritating projects of oppression, have at length compelled us, by the force of accumulated injuries, too severe to be any longer tolerable, to disturb your majesty's repose by our complaints.

These sentiments are extorted from hearts, that much more willingly would bleed in your majesty's service. Yet so greatly have we been misrepresented, that a necessity has been alledged of taking our property from us without our consent, " to defray the expenses of the administration, the support of civil government, and the defence, protection and security of the colonies." But we beg leave to assure your majesty that such provision has been and will be made for defraying the two first articles, as has been and shall be judged by the legislatures of the several colonies, just and suitable to their respective circumstances : and for the defence, protection and security of the colonies, their militia, if properly regulated, as they earnestly desire may immediately be done, would be fully sufficient, at least in times of peace ; and in case of war, your faithful colonists will be ready and willing, as they have ever been, when constitutionally required, to demonstrate their loyalty to your majesty, by exerting their most strenuous efforts in granting supplies and raising forces. Yielding to no British subjects in affectionate attachment to your majesty's person, family and government ; we too dearly prize the privilege of expressing that attachment by those proofs, that are honorable to the prince who receives them, and to the people who give them, ever to resign it to any body of men upon earth.

Had we been permitted to enjoy, in quiet the inheritance

left us by our forefathers, we should at this time, have been peaceably, cheerfully, and usefully employed in recommending ourselves, by every testimony of devotion, to your majesty, and of veneration to the state from which we derive our origin. But tho now exposed to unexpected and unnatural scenes of distress by a contention with that nation, in whose parental guidance on all important affairs we have hitherto, with filial reverence, constantly trusted, and therefore can derive no instruction in our present unhappy and perplexing circumstances from any former experience. Yet, we doubt not, the purity of our intention, and the integrity of our conduct, will justify us at that grand tribunal, before which all mankind must submit to judgment.

We ask but for peace, liberty, and safety. We wish not a diminution of the prerogative, nor do we solicit the grant of any new right in our favor. Your royal authority over us, and our connection with Great-Britain, we shall always carefully and zealously endeavor to support and maintain.

Filled with sentiments of duty to your majesty, and of affection to our parent state, deeply impressed by our education, and strongly confirmed by our reason; and, anxious to evince the sincerity of these dispositions, we present this petition only to obtain redress of grievances, and relief from fears and jealousies, occasioned by the system of statutes and regulations adopted since the close of the late war, for raising a revenue in America—extending the powers of courts of admiralty and vice admiralty—trying persons in Great-Britain for offences alledged to be committed in America—affecting the province of Massachusetts-Bay—and altering the government, and extending the limits of Quebec. By the abolition of which system, the harmony between Great-Britain and these colonies, so necessary to the happiness of both, and so ardently desired by the latter, and the usual intercourse, will be immediately restored. In the magnanimity and justice of your majesty and parliament we confide for a redress of our other grievances, trusting, that when the causes of our apprehensions are removed, our future conduct will prove us not unworthy of the regard we have been accustomed, in our happier days, to enjoy. For, appealing to that Being who searches thoroughly the hearts of his creatures, we solemnly profess, that our councils have been influenced by no other motive, than a dread of impending danger.

Permit us then, most gracious sovereign, in the name of all your faithful people in America, with the utmost humility, to implore you, for the honor of Almighty God, whose pure religion our enemies are undermining; for your glory, which can be advanced only by rendering your subjects happy, and keeping them united; for the interests of your family, depending on an adherence to the principles that enthroned it; for the safety and welfare of your kingdoms and dominions, threatened with almost unavoidable dangers and distresses—that your majesty, as the loving father of your whole people, connected by the same bonds of law, loyalty, faith and blood, tho dwelling in various countries, will not suffer the transcendant relation formed by these ties to be farther violated in uncertain expectation of effects, that if attained, never can compensate for the calamities thro which they must be gained.

We, therefore, most earnestly beseech your majesty, that your royal authority and interposition may be used for our relief; and that a gracious answer may be given to this petition.

That your majesty may enjoy every felicity through a long and glorious reign over loyal and happy subjects, and that your descendants may inherit your prosperity and dominions till time shall be no more, is, and always will be, our sincere and fervent prayer.

A DECLARATION, by the REPRESENTATIVES of the United Colonies of North-America, setting forth the causes and necessity of their taking up Arms, July 6, 1775.

IF it was possible for men, who exercise their reason, to believe, that the Divine author of our existence, intended a part of the human race to hold an absolute property in, and an unbounded power over others, marked out by his infinite goodness and wisdom, as the objects of a legal domination, never rightly resistible, however severe and oppressive, the inhabitants of these colonies might at least require from the parliament of Great-Britain, some evidence, that this dreadful authority over them has been granted to that body. But a reverence for our great Creator, principles of humanity, and the dictates of common sense, must

convince all those who reflect upon the subject, that government was instituted to promote the welfare of mankind, and ought to be administered for the attainment of that end. The legislature of *Great-Britain*, however, stimulated by an inordinate passion for a power not only unjustifiable, but which they know to be peculiarly reprobated by the very constitution of that kingdom, and desperate of success in any mode of contest, where regard should be had to truth, law, or right, have at length, deserting those, attempted to effect their cruel and impolitic purpose of enslaving these colonies by violence, and have thereby rendered it necessary for us to close with their last appeal from reason to arms.— Yet however blinded that assembly may be, by their intemperate rage for unlimited domination, so to slight justice and the opinion of mankind, we esteem ourselves bound by obligations of respect to the rest of the world, to make known the justice of our cause.

Our forefathers, inhabitants of the Island of *Great-Britain*, left their native land, to seek on these shores, a residence for civil and religious freedom. At the expense of their blood, at the hazard of their fortunes, without the least charge to the country from which they removed, by unceasing labor and an unconquerable spirit, they effected settlements in the distant and inhospitable wilds of *America*, then filled with numerous and warlike nations of barbarians.— Societies or governments, vested with perfect legislatures, were formed under charters from the crown, and an harmonious intercourse was established between the colonies and the kingdom from which they derived their origin. The mutual benefits of this union became in a short time so extraordinary as to excite astonishment. It is universally confessed, that the amazing increase of the wealth, strength, and navigation of the realm, arose from this source; and the minister, who so wisely and successfully directed the measures of *Great-Britain*, in the late war, publicly declared, that these Colonies enabled her to triumph over her enemies.— Towards the conclusion of that war, it pleased our sovereign to make a change in his counsels.— From that fatal moment, the affairs of the *British* empire began to fall into confusion, and gradually sliding from the summit of glorious prosperity, to which they had been advanced by the virtues and abilities of one man, are at length distracted by the convulsions that now shake it to its deepest foundations.— The

new ministry, finding the brave foes of *Britain*, tho' frequently defeated, yet still contending, took up the unfortunate idea of granting them a hasty peace, and of then subduing her faithful friends.

These devoted Colonies were judged to be in such a state, as to present victories without bloodshed, and all the easy emoluments of statuteable plunder. The uninterrupted tenor of their peaceable and respectful behavior from the beginning of colonization, their dutiful, zealous, and useful services during the war, tho' so recently and amply acknowledged in the most honorable manner by his majesty, by the late king, and by parliament, could not save them from the meditated innovations. Parliament was influenced to adopt the pernicious project, and assuming a new power over them, have in the course of eleven years given such decisive specimens of the spirit and consequences attending this power as to leave no doubt concerning the effects of acquiescence under it. They have undertaken to give and grant our money without our consent, tho' we have ever exercised an exclusive right to dispose of our own property; statutes have been passed for extending the jurisdiction of courts of admiralty and vice admiralty beyond their ancient limits; for depriving us of the accustomed and inestimable privilege of trial by jury in cases affecting both life and property; for suspending the legislature of one of the Colonies; for interdicting all commerce to the capital of another; and for altering, fundamentally, the form of government established by charter, and secured by acts of its own legislature, solemnly confirmed by the crown; for exempting the "murderers" of Colonists from legal trial, and in effect, from punishment; for erecting, in a neighboring province, acquired by the joint arms of *Great-Britain* and *America*, a despotism dangerous to our very existence; and for quartering soldiers upon the Colonists in time of profound peace. It has also been resolved in parliament, that Colonists, charged with committing certain offences, shall be transported to *England* to be tried.

But why should we enumerate our injuries in detail? By one statute it is declared, that parliament can "of right make laws to bind us in all cases whatsoever." What is to defend us against so enormous, so unlimited a power? Not a single man of those who assume it, is chosen by us; or is subject to our control or influence: but on the contrary, they are all of them exempt from the operation of such laws, and

an *American* revenue, if not diverted from the ostensible purposes for which it is raised, would actually lighten their own burdens in proportion as they increase ours. We saw the misery to which such despotism would reduce us. We for ten years incessantly and ineffectually besieged the throne as supplicants ; we reasoned, we remonstrated with parliament in the most mild and decent language.

Administration, sensible that we should regard these oppressive measures as freemen ought to do, sent over fleets and armies to enforce them. The indignation of the *Americans* was roused, it is true ; but it was the indignation of a virtuous, loyal, and affectionate people. A Congress of delegates from the United Colonies was assembled at *Philadelphia*, on the *fifth* day of last *September*. We resolved again to offer a humble and dutiful petition to the king, and also addressed our fellow subjects of *Great-Britain*. We have pursued every temperate, every respectful measure ; we have even proceeded to break off our commercial intercourse with our fellow subjects, as the last peaceable admonition, that our attachment to no nation upon earth should supplant our attachment to liberty.—This, we flattered ourselves, was the ultimate step of the controversy : But subsequent events have shewn, how vain was this hope of finding moderation in our enemies.

Several threatening expressions against the Colonies were inserted in his majesty's speech. Our petition, tho' we were told it was a decent one, and that his majesty had been pleased to receive it graciously, and to promise laying it before his parliament, was huddled into both houses among a bundle of *American* papers, and there neglected. The Lords and Commons in their address, in the month of *February*, said that " a rebellion at that time actually existed within the province of *Massachusetts Bay* ; and that those concerned in it had been countenanced and encouraged by unlawful combinations, and engagements, entered into by his majesty's subjects in several of the other Colonies ; and therefore they besought his majesty, that he would take the most effectual measures to enforce due obedience to the laws and authority of the supreme legislature."—Soon after, the commercial intercourse of whole Colonies, with foreign countries, and with each other, was cut off by an act of parliament. By another, several of them were entirely prohibited from the fisheries in the seas near their coast, on which

they always depended for their subsistence; and large reinforcements of ships and troops were immediately sent over to General Gage.

Fruitless were all the entreaties, arguments, and eloquence of an illustrious band of the most distinguished peers, and commoners, who nobly and strenuously asserted the justice of our cause, to stay, or even to mitigate, the needless fury with which these accumulated and unexampled outrages were hurried on.—Equally fruitless was the interference of the city of London, of Bristol, and many other respectable towns in our favor. Parliament adopted an insidious manœuvre calculated to divide us, to establish a perpetual auction of taxations where Colony should bid against Colony, all of them uninformed what ransom would redeem their lives; and thus to extort from us, at the point of the bayonet, the unknown sums that would be sufficient to gratify, *if possible to gratify* ministerial rapacity, with the miserable indulgence left to us of raising, in our own mode, the prescribed tribute. What terms more rigid and humiliating could have been dictated by remorseless victors to conquered enemies? In our circumstances to *accept* them would be to *deserve* them.

Soen after the intelligence of these proceedings arrived on this continent, General Gage, who in the course of the last year had taken possession of the town of *Boston* in the province of *Massachusetts Bay*, and still occupied it as a garrison, on the 19th day of April, sent out from that place a large detachment of his army, who made an unprovoked assault on the inhabitants of the said province, at the town of *Lexington*; as appears by the affidavits of a great number of persons (some of whom were officers and soldiers of that detachment) murdered eight of the inhabitants, and wounded many others. From thence the troops proceeded, in warlike array, to the town of *Concord*, where they set upon another party of the inhabitants of the same province, killing several and wounding more, untill compelled to retreat by the country people, suddenly assembled to repel this cruel aggression. Hostilities, thus commenced by the *British* troops, have been since prosecuted by them without regard to faith or reputation.—The inhabitants of *Boston*, being confined within that town by the General their Governor; and having, in order to procure their dismissal entered into a treaty with him, it was stipulated that the said inhabitants, having deposited their arms, with their own

magistrates, should have liberty to depart, taking with them their other effects. They accordingly delivered up their arms: but in open violation of honor, in defiance of the obligation of treaties, which even savage nations esteem sacred, the Governor ordered the arms, deposited as aforesaid, that they might be preserved for their owners, to be seized by a body of soldiers; detained the greatest part of the inhabitants in the town, and compelled the few who were permitted to retire, to leave their most valuable effects behind.

By this perfidy, wives are separated from their husbands, children from their parents, the aged and the sick from their relations and friends, who wish to attend and comfort them; and those who have been used to live in plenty, and even elegance, are reduced to deplorable distress.

The General, further emulating his ministerial masters, by a proclamation bearing date on the 12th day of June, after venting the grossest falsehoods, and calumnies against the good people of these Colonies, proceeds to "declare them all, either by name or description, to be rebels and traitors; to supersede the course of the common law, and instead thereof to publish and order the use and exercise of the law martial." His troops have butchered our countrymen, have wantonly burnt Charlestown, besides a considerable number of houses in other places; our ships and vessels are seized; the necessary supplies of provisions are intercepted, and he is exerting his utmost power to spread destruction and devastation around him.

We have received certain intelligence, that General Carleton, the Governor of Canada, is instigating the people of that province and the Indians to fall upon us; and we have but too much reason to apprehend, that schemes have been formed to excite domestic enemies against us. In brief, a part of these Colonies now feel, and all of them are sure of feeling, as far as the vengeance of administration can inflict them, the complicated calamities of fire, sword, and famine. We are reduced to the alternative of choosing an unconditional submission to the tyranny of irritated ministers, or resistance by force. The latter is our choice. We have counted the cost of this contest, and find nothing so dreadful as voluntary slavery.—Honor, justice, and humanity forbid us tamely to surrender that freedom which we received from our gallant ancestors, and which our innocent posterity have

a right to receive from us. We cannot endure the infamy and guilt of resigning succeeding generations to that wretchedness which inevitably awaits them, if we basely entail hereditary bondage upon them.

Our cause is just. Our union is perfect. Our internal resources are great; and, if necessary, foreign assistance is undoubtedly attainable.—We gratefully acknowledge, as signal instances of the Divine favor towards us, that Providence would not permit us to be called into this severe controversy, until we were grown up to our present strength, had been previously exercised in warlike operations, and possessed of the means of defending ourselves. With hearts fortified with these animating reflections, we most solemnly, before God and the world *declare*, that, exerting the utmost energy of those powers, which our beneficent Creator hath graciously bestowed upon us, the arms we have been compelled by our enemies to assume, we will, in defiance of every hazard, with unabating firmness and perseverance, employ for the preservation of our liberties; being with one mind resolved to *die freemen*, rather than to *live slaves*.

Left this declaration should disquiet the minds of our friends and fellow-subjects in any part of the empire, we assure them that we mean not to dissolve that union which has so long and so happily subsisted between us, and which we sincerely wish to see restored.—Necessity has not yet driven us into that desperate measure, or induced us to excite any other nation to war against them.—We have not raised armies with ambitious designs of separating from Great-britain, and establishing independent states. We fight not for glory or for conquest. We exhibit to mankind the remarkable spectacle of a people attacked by unprovoked enemies, without an imputation or even suspicion of offence. They boast of their privileges and civilization, and yet proffer no milder conditions than servitude or death,

In our own native land, in defense of the freedom that is our birthright, and which we ever enjoyed till the late violation of it—for the protection of our property, acquired solely by the honest industry of our forefathers and ourselves, against violence actually offered, we have taken up arms. We shall lay them down when hostilities shall cease on the part of the aggressors, and all danger of their being renewed shall be removed, and not before.

With an humble confidence in the mercies of the supreme

and impartial Judge and Ruler of the universe, we most devoutly implore his divine goodness to protect us happily through this great conflict, to dispose our adversaries to reconciliation on reasonable terms, and thereby to relieve the empire from the calamities of civil war.



SPEECH of his Excellency WILLIAM LIVINGSTON, Esq.
Governor, Captain-General, and Commander in Chief of the
State of New-Jersey and the territories thereunto belonging,
Chancellor and Ordinary of the same.

To the Honorable the Council, and General Assembly of the said
State.

GENTLEMEN,

HAVING already laid before the assembly, by messages, the several matters that have occurred to me, as more particularly demanding their attention during the present session, it may seem less necessary to address you, in the more ceremonious form of a speech. But conceiving it my duty to the state, to deliver my sentiments on the present situation of affairs, and the eventful contest between Great-Britain and America, which could not, with any propriety, be conveyed in occasional messages, you will excuse my giving you the trouble of attending for the purpose.

After deploring with you the desolation spread thro part of this State, by an unrelenting enemy, who have indeed marked their progress with a devastation unknown to civilized nations; and evincive of the most implacable vengeance, I heartily congratulate you, on that subsequent series of success, wherewith it has pleased the Almighty to crown the American arms: and particularly on the important enterprize against the enemy at Trenton; and the signal victory obtained over them at Princeton, by the gallant troops under the command of his Excellency General Washington.

Considering the contemptible figure they make at present, and the disgust they have given to their own confederates amongst us, by their more than Gothic ravages; (for thus doth the Great Disposer of events often deduce good out of evil) their irruption into our dominion will redound to the public benefit. It has certainly enabled us the more

effectually to distinguish our friends from our enemies. It has winnowed the chaff from the grain. It has discriminated the temporizing politician, who, on the first appearance of danger, was determined to secure his idol, property, at the hazard of the general weal; from the persevering patriot, who, having embarked his all in the common cause, chooses rather to risque, rather to lose that all, for the preservation of the more estimable treasure, LIBERTY, than to possess it (enjoy it he could not) upon the ignominious terms of tamely resigning his country and posterity to infamy and slavery. It has however opened the eyes of those, who were made to believe that their impious merit in abetting our prosecutors, would exempt them from being involved in the common calamity. But as the rapacity of the enemy was boundless, their rapine was indiscriminate, and their barbarity unparalleled. They have plundered friends and foes. Effects capable of division, they have divided; such as were not, they have destroyed. They have warred upon decrepid age: warred upon defenceless youth. They have committed hostilities against the professors of literature, and the ministers of religion; against public records, and private monuments; against books of improvement, and papers of curiosity; and against the *arts and sciences*. They have butchered the wounded, asking for quarters; mangled the dying, weltering in their blood: refused the dead the rights of sepulture; suffered prisoners to perish for want of sustenance; violated the chastity of women; disfigured private dwellings of taste and elegance; and in the rage of impiety and barbarism, *profaned edifices dedicated to Almighty God*.

Yet there are among us, who, either from ambitious or lucrative motives, or intimidated by the terror of their arms; or from a partial fondness for the British constitution; or deluded by insidious propositions, are secretly abetting, or openly aiding their machinations, to deprive us of that liberty—without which, man is a beast, and government a curse.

Besides the inexpressible baseness of wishing to rise on the ruin of our country; or to acquire riches at the expense of the liberties and fortunes of our fellow citizens, how soon would those delusive dreams, upon the conquest of America, be turned into disappointment. Where is the fund to recompense those retainers to the British army; those intentional pensioners of a bankrupt nation? Were every state in America to be confiscated, and converted into cash, the

product would not satiate the avidity of their own creatures, nor furnish an adequate repast for the keen appetites of their own *ministerial beneficiaries*. Instead of gratuities and promotion, these unhappy accomplices in their tyranny, would meet with supercilious looks and cold disdain; and after tedious attendance, be finally told by their haughty masters, that they indeed approved of *the treason*, but despised the *traitor*. Insulted, in fine, by their pretended protectors, but real betrayers; and goaded with the stings of their own consciences, they would remain the frightful monuments of human contempt, and divine indignation; and linger out the rest of their days in self condemnation and remorse; and in weeping over the ruins of their country, which themselves had been instrumental in reducing to desolation and bondage. Others there are, who, terrified at the power of Britain, have been persuaded that she is not only formidable, but irresistible. That her power is great, is beyond question; that it is not to be despised, is the dictate of common prudence. But then we ought also to consider her as weak in council, and groaning with debt; reduced in her trade, reduced in her revenues, immersed in pleasure, enervated with luxury, and in dissipation and vanity surpassing all Europe. We ought to consider her as hated by a potent rival, her natural enemy, and particularly exasperated at her imperious conduct in the late war, as well as her provoking manner of commencing it; and then inflamed with resentment, and only watching a favorable juncture for open hostilities. We ought to consider the amazing expense and difficulty of exporting troops and provisions above three thousand miles, with the impossibility of recruiting their army at a less distance; save only, with such recreants, whose conscious guilt must, on the first approach of danger, appal the stoutest heart. These insuperable obstacles are known and acknowledged by every virtuous and impartial man in the nation. Even the author of this horrid war is incapable of concealing his own confusion and distress. Too great to be wholly suppressed, it frequently discovers itself in the course of his speech. A speech terrible in word, and fraught with contradiction; breathing threatenings and betraying terror; a motly mixture of magnanimity and consternation; of grandeur and abasement: with troops invincible, he dreads a defeat, and wants reinforcements: vic-

torious in America, and triumphant on the ocean, he is an humble dependent on a *petty Prince* ; and with full confidence in the friendship and alliance of France, he trembles at her *secret* designs and *open* preparations.

With all this, we ought to contrast the numerous and hardy sons of America : enured to toil ; seasoned alike to heat and cold ; hale, robust, patient of fatigue ; and from an ardent love of liberty, ready to face danger and death. The immense extent of continent, which our insatuated enemies have undertaken to subjugate. The remarkable unanimity of its inhabitants, notwithstanding the exception of a few apostates and deserters ; their unshaken resolution to maintain their freedom, or perish in the attempt ; the fertility of our soil in all kinds of provision necessary for the support of war ; our inexhaustible internal resources for military stores, and naval armaments ; our comparative economy in public expenses, and the millions we save by reprobating the farther exchange of our valuable staples for the worthless baubles and finery of English manufacture ; add to this, that in a cause so just and righteous on our part, we have the highest reason to expect the blessing of heaven upon our glorious conflict. For who can doubt the interposition of the **SUPREMACY** JUST, in favor of a people forced to arms, in defence of every thing dear and precious, against a nation deaf to our complaints, rejoicing in our misery, wantonly aggravating our oppressions ; determined to divide our substance, and by fire and sword, to compel us into submission.

Respecting the constitution of Great-Britain, bating certain prerogatives of dangerous tendency, it has indeed been applauded by the best judges, and displays in its original structure, illustrious proofs of wisdom and the knowledge of mankind. But what avails the *best* constitution with the *worst* administration ? For what is their present government, and what has it been for years past, but a *pensioned confederacy* against reason, and virtue, and honor, and patriotism, and the rights of man ! What their governors but a set of political craftsmen, flagitiously conspiring to erect the babel of *Despotism*, on the ruins of the ancient and beautiful fabric of *Law* ? A shameless cabal, notoriously employed in deceiving the prince, corrupting the parliament, debasing the people, depressing the most virtuous, and exalting the most profligate ! In short, an insatiable junta of public spoilers lavishing the national wealth, and by speculation and plun-

der, daily accumulating a debt already enormous ! And what is the majority of their Parliament, formerly the most august assembly in the world, but venal pensioners on the crown, a perfect mockery on all representation, and at the absolute devotion of every minister ! What were the characteristics of their administration of the provinces ? The substitution of instructions in the room of the law ; the multiplication of offices to strengthen the court interest ; perpetually extending the prerogatives of the king, and retrenching the rights of the subject ; advancing to the most eminent stations, men without education, and of dissolute manners ; employing with the peoples money, a band of emissaries to misrepresent and traduce the people ; sporting with our persons and estates, by filling the highest seats of justice with bankrupts, bullies, and blockheads.

From such a nation (though all this we bore, and should probably have borne for a century, had they not avowedly claimed the unconditional disposal of life and property) it is evidently our interest to be detached. To remain happy or safe in our connection with her, became henceforth utterly impossible. *She is moreover precipitating her own fall, or the age of miracles is returned ;* and Britain a phenomenon in the political world, without a parallel !

The proclamations to ensnare the timid and credulous, are, beyond expression, disingenuous and tantalizing. In a gilded pill they conceal real poison. They add insult to injury. After repeated intimations of *commissions* to treat with America, we are presented, instead of the peaceful olive branch, with the devouring sword ; instead of being visited with plenipotentiaries, to bring matters to an accommodation, we are invaded with an army, in *their* opinion, able to subdue us ; and upon discovering their error, the terms propounded, amount to this—“ *If you will submit, without resistance, we are content to take your property, and spare your lives ; and then* (the consummation of arrogance !) *we will graciously pardon you for having hitherto defended both.*”

Consider then their bewildered councils, their blundering ministers, their want of men and money, their impaired credit, and declining commerce, their lost revenues and starved islands, the corruption of their parliament, with the effeminacy of the nation, and the success of their enterprise, is against all probability. Considering farther the horrid enormity of waging war against their own brethren, expes-

ulating for an audience, complaining of injuries, and supplicating for redress, and waging it with a ferocity and vengeance unknown to modern ages, and contrary to all laws, human and divine ; and we can neither question the justice of our opposition, nor the assistance of heaven, to crown it with victory.

Let us, however, not presumptuously rely on the interposition of providence, without exerting those efforts which it is our duty to exert, and which our bountiful Creator has enabled us to exert. Let us do our part to open the next campaign with redoubled vigor ; and until the *United States* have humbled the pride of *Britain*, and obtained an honorable peace, cheerfully furnish our proportion for continuing the war—a war, on our side, founded on the immutable obligation of self defence, and in support of freedom, of virtue, and every thing tending to ennoble our nature, and render our people happy. On their part, prompted by boundless avarice, and a thirst for absolute sway, and built on a claim repugnant to every principle of reason and equity—a claim *subversive of all liberty, natural, civil, moral, and religious ; incompatible with human happiness, and usurping the attributes of DEITY, degrading man and blaspheming God.*

Let us all, therefore, of every rank and degree, remember our plighted faith and honor to maintain the cause with our lives and fortunes. Let us inflexibly persevere in prosecuting, to a happy period, what has been so gloriously begun, and hitherto so prosperously conducted. And let those, in more distinguished stations, use all their influence and authority, to rouse the supine ; to animate the irresolute ; to confirm the wavering, and to draw from his lurking hole, the skulking neutral, who, leaving to others the heat and burden of the day, means in the final result, to reap the fruits of that victory, for which he will not contend. Let us be peculiarly assiduous in bringing to condign punishment, those detestable parricides who have been openly active against their native country ; and may we, in all deliberations and proceedings, be influenced and directed by the great Arbiter of the fate of nations, by whom empires rise and fall, and who will not always suffer the *scepter of the wicked to rest on the lot of the righteous*, but in due time avenge an injured people on their unfeeling oppressor and his bloody instruments.

An ORATION, delivered at the north Church in Hartford, at the meeting of the Connecticut Society of the Cincinnati, July 4th, 1787, in commemoration of the Independence of the United States. By JOEL BARLOW, Esq. Published by desire of said Society.

Mr. President, Gentlemen of the Society, and fellow Citizens.

ON the anniversary of so great an event as the birth of the empire in which we live, none will question the propriety of passing a few moments in contemplating the various objects suggested to the mind by the important occasion. But at the present period, while the blessings, claimed by the sword of victory, and promised in the voice of peace, remain to be confirmed by our future exertions—while the nourishment, the growth, and even the existence of our empire, depend upon the united efforts of an extensive and divided people—the duties of this day ascend from amusement and congratulation, to a serious patriotic employment.

We are assembled, my friends, not to boast, but to realize—not to inflate our national vanity by a pompous relation of past achievements in the council or in the field; but from a modest retrospect of the truly dignified part already acted by our countrymen, from an accurate view of our present situation, and from an anticipation of the scenes that remain to be unfolded—to discern and familiarize the duties that still await us, as citizens, as soldiers, and as men.

Revolutions in other countries have been effected by accident. The faculties of human reason, and the rights of human nature, have been the sport of chance and the prey of ambition. And when indignation has burst the bands of slavery, to the destruction of one tyrant, it was only to impose the manacles of another. This arose from the imperfection of that early stage of society, which necessarily occasioned the foundation of empires on the eastern continent to be laid in ignorance, and which induced a total inability of foreseeing the improvements of civilization, or of adapting the government to a state of social refinement.

I shall but repeat a common observation, when I remark, that on the western continent the scene was entirely different, and a new task, totally unknown to the legislators of other nations, was imposed upon the fathers of the American empire.

Here was a people thinly scattered over an extensive territory, lords of the soil on which they trod, commanding a prodigious length of coast, and an equal breadth of frontier—a people habituated to liberty, professing a mild and benevolent religion, and highly advanced in science and civilization. To conduct such a people in a revolution, the address must be made to reason as well as to the passions.—And to reason, to the clear understanding of these variously affected colonies, the solemn address was made.

A people thus enlightened, and capable of discerning the connection of causes with their remotest effects, waited not the experience of oppression in their own persons; which they well knew would render them less able to conduct a regular opposition. But in the moment of their greatest prosperity, when every heart expanded with the increasing opulence of the British American dominions, and every tongue united in the praises of the parent state and her patriot king, when many circumstances concurred which would have rendered an ignorant people secure and inattentive to their future interests; at this moment the eyes of the American Argus were opened to the first, and most plausible invasion of the colonial rights.

In vain were we told, and perhaps with the greatest truth and sincerity, that the monies levied in America were all to be expended within the country, and for our benefit. Equally idle was the policy of Great-Britain, in commencing her new system by a small and almost imperceptible duty, and that upon very few articles. It was not the quantity of the tax, it was not the mode of appropriation, but it was the right of the demand, which was called in question. Upon this the people deliberated; this they discussed in a cool and dispassionate manner; and this they opposed in every shape that an artful and systematic ministry could devise, for more than ten years, before they assumed the sword.

This single circumstance, aside from the magnitude of the object, or the event of the contest, will stamp a peculiar glory on the American revolution, and mark it as a distinguished era in the history of mankind; that sober reason and reflection have done the work of enthusiasm, and performed the miracles of gods. In what other age or nation has a laborious and agricultural people, at ease upon their own farms, secure and distant from the approach of fleets and armies, tide-waiters, and stamp-masters, reasoned before they had

felt, and from the dictates of duty and conscience, encountered dangers, distress and poverty, for the sake of securing to posterity a government of independence and peace? The toils of ages and the fate of millions were to be sustained by a few hands. The voice of unborn nations called upon them for safety; but it was a still small voice, the voice of rational reflection. Here was no Cromwell to inflame the people with bigotry and zeal, no Cæsar to reward his followers with the spoils of vanquished foes, and no territory to be acquired by conquest. Ambition, superstition and avarice, those universal torches of war, never illuminated an American field of battle. But the permanent principles of sober policy spread thro' the colonies, roused the people to assert their rights, and conducted the revolution.

Whatever praise is due for the task already performed, it is certain that much remains to be done. The revolution is but half completed. Independence and government were the two objects contended for; and but one is yet obtained. To the glory of the present age, and the admiration of the future, our severance from the British empire was conducted upon principles as noble, as they were new and unprecedented in the history of human actions. Could the same generous principles, the same wisdom and unanimity be effected in exerting the establishment of a permanent federal system, what an additional lustre would it pour upon the present age! a lustre hitherto unequalled; a display of magnanimity for which mankind may never behold another opportunity.

The present is justly considered an alarming crisis; perhaps the most alarming that America ever saw. We have contended with the most powerful nation, and subdued the bravest and best appointed armies. But now we have to contend with ourselves, and encounter passions and prejudices more powerful than armies, and more dangerous to our peace. It is not for glory, it is for existence that we contend.

The first great object is to convince the people of the importance of their present situation; for the majority of a great people, on a subject which they understand, will never act wrong. If ever there was a time, in any age or nation, when the fate of millions depended on the voice of one, it is the present period in these states. Every free citizen of the American empire, ought now to consider himself as

the legislator of half mankind. When he views the amazing extent of territory, settled, and to be settled under the operation of his laws—when, like a wise politician, he contemplates the population of future ages—the changes to be wrought by the possible progress of arts, in agriculture, commerce and manufactures—the increasing connection and intercourse of nations, and the effect of one rational political system upon the general happiness of mankind—his mind, dilated with the great idea, will realize a liberality of feeling which leads to a rectitude of conduct. He will see that the system to be established by his suffrage, is calculated for the great benevolent purposes of extending peace, happiness, and progressive improvement to a large proportion of his fellow creatures. As there is a probability that the system to be proposed by the Convention may answer this description, there is every reason to hope it will be viewed by the people with that candor and dispassionate respect which is due to the importance of the subject.

While the anxiety of the feeling heart is breathing the perpetual sigh for the attainment of so great an object, it becomes the strongest duty of the social connection, to enlighten and harmonize the minds of our fellow citizens, and point them to a knowledge of their interests, as an extensive federal people, and fathers of increasing nations. The price put into their hands is great, beyond all comparison; and, as they improve it, they will entail happiness or misery upon a larger proportion of human beings, than could be effected by the conduct of all the nations of Europe united.

Those who are possessed of abilities or information in any degree above the common rank of their fellow citizens, are called upon by every principle of humanity, to diffuse a spirit of candor, and rational enquiry upon these important subjects.

The present is an age of philosophy; and America, the empire of reason. Here, neither the pageantry of courts, nor the glooms of superstition, have dazzled or beclouded the mind. Our duty calls us to act worthy of the age and the country that gave us birth. Tho' inexperience may have betrayed us into errors; yet these have not been fatal; and our own discernment will point us to their proper remedy.

However defective the present confederated system may appear—yet a due consideration of the circumstances under

which it was framed, will teach us rather to admire its wisdom, than to murmur at its faults. The same political abilities which were displayed in that institution, united with the experience we have had of its operation, will doubtless produce a system, which will stand the test of ages, in forming a powerful and happy people.

Elevated with this extensive prospect, we may consider present inconveniences as unworthy of regret. At the close of the war, an uncommon plenty of circulating specie, and an universal passion for trade, tempted many individuals to involve themselves in ruin, and injure the credit of their country. But these are evils which work their own remedy. The paroxysm is already over. Industry is encreasing faster than ever it declined; and, with some exceptions, where legislative authority has sanctioned fraud, the people are honestly discharging their private debts, and increasing the resources of their wealth.

Every possible encouragement for great and generous exertions, is now presented before us. Under the idea of a permanent and happy government, every point of view in which the future situation of America can be placed, fills the mind with a peculiar dignity, and opens an unbounded field of thought. The natural resources of the country are inconceivably various and great. The enterprising genius of the people promises a most rapid improvement in all the arts that embellish human nature. The blessings of a rational government will invite emigrations from the rest of the world, and fill the empire with the worthiest and happiest of mankind; while the example of political wisdom and felicity here to be displayed, will excite emulation through the kingdoms of the earth, and meliorate the condition of the human race.

From CICERO's Orations against VERRES.

THE time is come, Fathers, when that which has long been wished for towards allaying the envy your order has been subject to, and removing the imputations against trials, is (not by human contrivance, but superior direction) effectually put in our power. An opinion has long prevailed, not only here at home, but likewise in foreign

countries, both dangerous to you and pernicious to the state, viz. that in prosecutions, men of wealth are always safe, however clearly convicted. There is now to be brought upon his trial before you, to the confusion I hope of the propagators of this slanderous imputation, one whose life and actions condemn him in the opinion of all impartial persons, but who, according to his own reckoning and declared dependence upon his riches, is already acquitted; I mean Caius Verres. If that sentence is passed upon him which his crimes deserve, your authority, fathers, will be venerable and sacred in the eyes of the public. But if his great riches should bias you in his favor, I shall still gain one point, viz. to make it apparent to all the world, that what was wanting in this case was not a criminal nor a prosecutor, but justice and adequate punishment.

To pass over the shameful irregularities of his youth, what does his quaestorship, the first public employment he held, what does it exhibit, but one continued scene of villanies? Cneius Carbo, plundered of the public money by his own treasurer, a consul stripped and betrayed, an army deserted and reduced to want, a province robbed, the civil and religious rights of a people violated. The employment he held in Asia Minor and Pamphylia, what did it produce, but the ruin of those countries? in which houses, cities, and temples were robbed by him. What was his conduct in his praetorship here at home? Let the plundered temples, and the public works, neglected that he might embezzle the money intended for carrying them on, bear witness. But his praetorship in Sicily crowns all his works of wickedness, and furnishes a lasting monument to his infamy. The mischiefs done by him in that country, during the three years of his iniquitous administration, are such, that many years under the wisest and best of praetors will not be sufficient to restore things to the condition in which he found them. For it is notorious, that during the time of his tyranny, the Sicilians neither enjoyed the protection of their own original laws, of the regulations made for their benefit by the Roman senate upon their coming under the protection of the commonwealth, nor of the natural and unalienable rights of men. His nod has decided all causes in Sicily these three years; and his decisions have broken all law, all precedent, all right. The sums he has by arbitrary taxes and unheard of impositions extorted from the industrious poor

are not to be computed. The most faithful allies of the commonwealth have been treated as enemies. Roman citizens have, like slaves, been put to death with tortures. The most atrocious criminals, for money, have been exempted from deserved punishments; and men of the most unexceptionable characters, condemned and banished unheard. The harbors, tho sufficiently fortified, and the gates of strong towns, opened to pirates and ravagers; the soldiery and sailors belonging to a province under the protection of the commonwealth, starved to death; whole fleets, to the great detriment of the province, suffered to perish; the ancient monuments of either Sicilian or Roman greatness, the statues of heroes and princes, carried off; and the temples stripped of the images. The infamy of his lewdness has been such as decency forbids me to describe; nor will I, by mentioning particulars, put those unfortunate persons to fresh pain, who have not been able to save their wives and daughters from his impurity. And these his atrocious crimes have been committed in so public a manner, that there is no one who has heard of his name, but could reckon up his actions—Having, by his iniquitous sentences, filled the prisons with the most industrious and deserving of the people, he then proceeded to order numbers of Roman citizens to be strangled in the goals; so that the exclamation, “I am a citizen of Rome,” which has often, in the most distant regions and among the most barbarous people, been a protection, was of no service to them; but on the contrary, brought on a speedier and more severe punishment upon them.

I ask, now, Verres, what you have to advance against this charge? Will you pretend to deny it? Will you pretend, that any thing false, that even any thing aggravated, is alleged against you? Had any prince, or any state committed the same outrage against the privilege of Roman citizens, should we not think we had sufficient ground for declaring immediate war against them? What punishment ought then to be inflicted upon a tyrannical and wicked prætor, who dared, at no greater distance than Sicily, within sight of the Italian coast, to put to the infamous death of crucifixion, that unfortunate and innocent citizen, Publius Gavius Cofanus, only for his having asserted his privilege of his citizenship, and declared his intention of appealing to the justice of his country against a cruel oppressor, who had.

unjustly confined him in prison, at Syracuse, from whence he had just made his escape? The unhappy man, arrested as he was going to embark for his native country, is brought before the wicked prætor. With eyes darting fury, and a countenance distorted with cruelty, he orders the helpless victim of his rage to be stripped, and rods to be brought; accusing him, but without the least shadow of evidence, or even of suspicion, of having come to Sicily as a spy. It was in vain that the unhappy man cried out "I am a Roman citizen—I have served under Lucius Pretius, who is now at Panormus, and will attest my innocence." The blood thirsty prætor, deaf to all he could urge in his own defence, ordered the infamous punishment to be inflicted. Thus, fathers, was an innocent Roman citizen publicly mangled with scourging; whilst the only words he uttered amidst his cruel sufferings, were, "I am a Roman citizen!" With these he hoped to defend himself from violence and infamy. But of so little service was this privilege to him, that while he was thus asserting his citizenship, the order was given for his execution—for his execution upon the cross!

O liberty!—O sound, once delightful to every Roman ear!—O sacred privilege of Roman citizenship!—once sacred!—now trampled upon! But what then? Is it come to this? Shall an inferior magistrate, a governor, who holds his own power of the Roman people, in a Roman province, within sight of Italy, bind, scourge, torture with fire and red hot plates of iron, and at last put to the infamous death of the cross, a Roman citizen? Shall neither the cries of innocence, expiring in agony, nor the tears of pitying spectators, nor the majesty of the Roman commonwealth, nor the fear of the justice of his country, restrain the licentious and wanton cruelty of a monster, who, in confidence of his riches, strikes at the root of liberty, and sets mankind at defiance?

I conclude with expressing my hopes, that your wisdom and justice, fathers, will not, by suffering the atrocious and unexampled insolence of Caius Verres to escape the due punishment, leave room to apprehend the danger of a total subversion of authority, and introduction of general anarchy and confusion.

SPEECH of CANULEIUS, a Roman Tribune, to the Consuls ; in which he demands that the Plebeians may be admitted into the Consulship : and that the Law prohibiting Patricians and Plebeians from intermarrying, may be repealed.

WHAT an insult upon us is this ! If we are not so rich as the Patricians, are we not citizens of Rome as well as they ? inhabitants of the same country ? members of the same community ? The nations bordering upon Rome, and even strangers more remote, are admitted not only to marriages with us, but to what is of much greater importance, the freedom of the city. Are we, because we are commoners, to be worse treated than strangers ? And when we demand that the people may be free to bestow their offices and dignities on whom they please, do we ask any thing unreasonable or new ? Do we claim more than their original inherent right ? What occasion then, for all this uproar, as if the universe was falling to ruin ? They were just going to lay violent hands upon me in the senate house.

What ! must this empire, then be unavoidably overturned ? must Rome of necessity sink at once, if a Plebeian, worthy of the office, should be raised to the consulship ? The Patricians, I am persuaded, if they could, would deprive you of the common light. It certainly offends them that you breathe, that you speak, that you have the shapes of men. Nay, but to make a commoner a consul, would be, say they, a most enormous thing. Numa Pompilius, however, without being so much as a Roman citizen, was made king of Rome. The elder Tarquin, by birth not even Italian, was nevertheless placed upon the throne. Servius Tullius, the son of a captive woman, (nobody knows who his father was) obtained the kingdom as the reward of his wisdom and virtue. In those days, no man, in whom virtue shone conspicuous, was rejected or despised on account of his race and descent. And did the state prosper the less for that ? Were not these strangers the very best of all our kings ? And supposing now, that a Plebeian should have their talents and merit, must not he be suffered to govern us ?

But, “ we find, that upon the abolition of the regal power, no commoner was chosen to the consulate.” And what of that ? Before Numa’s time, there was no pontiffs in Rome. Before Servius Tullius’ days, there was no census, no divi-

sion of the people into classes and centuries. Who ever heard of consuls before the expulsion of Tarquin the proud? Dictators, we all know, are of modern invention; and so are the officers of tribunes, ædiles, quæstors. Within these ten years we have made decemvirs, and we have unmade them. Is nothing to be done but what has been done before? That very law forbidding marriages of Patricians, with Plebeians, is not that a new thing? Was there any such law before the decemvirs enacted it? and a most shameful one it is, in a free state. Such marriages, it seems, will taint the pure blood of the nobility! Why, if they think so, let them take care to match their sisters and daughters with men of their own sort. No Plebeian will do violence to the daughter of a Patrician. Those are exploits for our prime nobles. There is no need to fear that we shall force any body into a contract of marriage. But to make an express law to prohibit marriages of Patricians with Plebeians, what is this but to show the utmost contempt of us, and to declare one part of the community to be impure and unclean?

They talk to us of the confusion there will be in families, if this statute should be repealed. I wonder they don't make a law against a commoner's living near a nobleman, or going the same road that he is going; or being present at the same feast, or appearing in the same market place. They might as well pretend that these things make confusion in families, as that intermarriages will do it. Does not every one know that the children will be ranked according to the quality of their father, let him be a Patrician or a Plebeian? In short, 'tis manifest enough that we have nothing in view but to be treated as men and citizens; nor can they, who oppose our demand, have any motive to do it but the love of domineering. I would fain know of you, Consuls and Patricians, is the sovereign power in the people of Rome, or in you? I hope you will allow, that the people can, at their pleasure, either make a law or repeal one. And will you, then, as soon as any law is proposed to them, pretend to lift them immediately for the war, and hinder them from giving their suffrages, by leading them into the field?

Hear me, Consuls. Whether the news of the war you talk of be true, or whether it be only a false rumour spread abroad for nothing but a color to send the people out of the city, I declare as tribune, that this people who have already so often spilt their blood in our country's cause, are again

ready to arm for its defence and its glory, if they may be restored to their natural rights, and you will no longer treat us like strangers in our own country. But if you account us unworthy of your alliance by intermarriages, if you will not suffer the entrance to the chief offices in the state to be open to all persons of merit indifferently, but will confine your choice of magistrates to the senate alone—talk of wars as much as ever you please; paint, in your ordinary discourses, the league and power of our enemies, ten times more dreadful than you do now—I declare, that this people, whom you so much despise, and to whom you are nevertheless indebted for all your victories, shall never more inlist themselves; not a man of them shall take arms; not a man of them shall expose his life for imperious lords, with whom he can neither share the dignities of the state, nor in private life have any alliance by marriage.

SPEECH of PUBLIUS SCIPIO *to the ROMAN ARMY,
before the Battle of the Ticin.*

WERE you, Soldiers, the same army which I had with me, in Gaul, I might well forbear saying any thing to you at this time: for what occasion could there be to use exhortation to cavalry that had so signally vanquished the squadrons of the enemy upon the Rhone; or to legions, by whom that same enemy, flying before them to avoid a battle, did in effect confess themselves conquered? But, as these troops having been enrolled for Spain, are there with my brother Cneius, making war under my auspices (as was the will of the senate and people of Rome,) I, that you might have a consul for your Captain against Hannibal and the Carthagenians, have freely offered myself for this war. You, then, have a new General; and I, a new army. On this account, a few words from me to you will be neither improper nor unseasonable.

That you may not be unapprised of what sort of enemies you are going to encounter, or of what is to be feared from them; they are the very same, whom, in a former war, you vanquished both by land and sea; the same from whom you took Sicily and Sardinia, and who have been these twenty years your tributaries. You will not, I presume, march

against these men with only that courage with which you are wont to face other enemies ; but with a certain anger and indignation, such as you would feel if you saw your slaves on a sudden rise up in arms against you. Conquered and enslaved, it is not boldness but necessity, that urges them to battle ; unless you can believe that those, who avoided fighting when their army was entire, have acquired better hope by the loss of two thirds of their horse and foot in the passage of the Alps.

But you have heard, perhaps, that tho they are few in number, they are men of stout hearts, and robust bodies ; heroes of such strength and vigor, as nothing is able to resist. Mere effigies ! nay, shadows of men ! wretches, emaciated with hunger, and benumbed with cold ! bruised and battered to pieces among the rocks and craggy cliffs ! their weapons broken, and their horses weak and foundered ! Such are the cavalry, and such the infantry, with which you are going to contend ; not enemies, but the fragments of enemies. There is nothing which I more apprehend, than that it will be thought Hannibal was vanquished by the Alps before we had any conflict with him. But, perhaps, it was fitting it should be so ; and that, with a people and a leader who had violated leagues and covenants, the gods themselves, without man's help, should begin the war, and bring it to a near conclusion ; and that we, who, next to the gods, have been injured and offended, should happily finish what they have begun.

I need not be in any fear that you should suspect me of saying these things merely to encourage you, while inwardly I have different sentiments. What hindered me from going into Spain ? That was my province, where I should have had the less dreaded Asdrubal, not Hannibal, to deal with. But, hearing, as I passed along the coast of Gaul, of this enemy's march, I landed my troops, sent the horse forward, and pitched my camp upon the Rhone. A part of my cavalry encountered, and defeated that of the enemy. My infantry not being able to overtake theirs which fled before us, I returned to my fleet ; and with all the expedition I could use in so long a voyage by sea and land, am come to meet them at the foot of the Alps. Was it, then, my inclination to avoid a contest with this tremendous Hannibal ? and have I met with him only by accident and unawares ? or am I come on purpose to challenge him to the

combat? I would gladly try, whether the earth, within these twenty years, has brought forth a new kind of Carthaginians; or whether they be the same sort of men who fought at the Ægates, and whom at Eryx, you suffered to redeem themselves at eighteen denarii a head: whether this Hannibal, for labors and journies, be as he would be thought, the rival of Hercules; or whether he be, what his father left him, a tributary, a vassal, a slave of the Roman people. Did not the consciousness of his wicked deed at Saguntum torment him and make him desperate, he would have some regard, if not to his conquered country, yet surely to his own family, to his father's memory, to the treaty written with Amilcar's own hand. We might have starved him in Eryx; we might have passed into Africa with our victorious fleet; and in a few days, have destroyed Carthage. At their humble supplication, we pardoned them, we released them when they were closely shut up without a possibility of escaping; we made peace with them when they were conquered. When they were distressed by the African war, we considered them, we treated them, as a people under our protection. And what is the return they make us for all these favors? Under the conduct of a hare-brained young man, they come hither to overturn our state, and lay waste our country. I could wish, indeed, that it were not so; and that the war we are now engaged in, concerned only our own glory, and not our preservation. But the contest at present is not for the possession of Sicily and Sardinia, but of Italy itself: nor is there behind us another army, which, if we should not prove the conquerors, may make head against our victorious enemies. There are no more Alps for them to pass, which might give us leisure to raise new forces. No, soldiers; here you must take your stand, as if you were just now before the walls of Rome. Let every one reflect, that he is now to defend not his own person only, but his wife, his children, his helpless infants. Yet let not private considerations alone possess our minds: let us remember that the eyes of the senate and people of Rome are upon us; and that, as our force and courage shall now prove, such will be the fortune of that city and of the Roman Empire.

Caius Marius to the Romans; showing the Absurdity of their hesitating to confer on him the Rank of General, merely on account of his Extractions.

IT is but too common, my countrymen, to observe a material difference between the behavior of those who stand candidates for places of power and trust, before and after their obtaining them. They solicit them in one manner, and execute them in another. They set out with a great appearance of activity, humility and moderation; and they quickly fall into sloth, pride, and avarice. It is undoubtedly, no easy matter to discharge, to the general satisfaction, the duty of a supreme commander in troublesome times. To carry on with effect, an expensive war, and yet be frugal of the public money; to oblige those to serve, whom it may be delicate to offend: to conduct at the same time, a complicated variety of operations; to concert measures at home, answerable to the state of things abroad; and to gain every valuable end, in spite of opposition from the envious, the factious, and the disaffected—to do all this, my countrymen, is more difficult than is generally thought.

But besides the disadvantages which are common to me with all others in eminent stations, my case is, in this respect, peculiarly hard—that, whereas a commander of Patrician rank, if he is guilty of a neglect or breach of duty, has his great connexions, the antiquity of his family, the important services of his ancestors, and the multitudes he has, by power, engaged in his interest, to screen him from condign punishment, my whole safety depends upon myself, which renders it the more indispensibly necessary for me to take care that my conduct be clear and unexceptionable. Besides I am well aware, my countrymen, that the eye of the public is upon me; and that, tho' the impartial, who prefer the real advantage of the commonwealth to all other considerations, favor my pretensions, the Patricians want nothing so much as an occasion against me. It is therefore my fixed resolution, to use my best endeavors, that you be not disappointed in me, and that their indirect designs against me may be defeated.

I have, from my youth, been familiar with toils and with dangers. I was faithful to your interest, my countrymen, when I served you for no reward but that of honor. It is not my design to betray you, now that you have conferred

upon me a place of profit. You have committed to my conduct the war against Jugurtha. The Patricians are offended at this. But, where would be the wisdom of giving such a command to one of their honorable body? a person of illustrious birth, of ancient family, of innumerable statues, but—of no experience! What service would his long line of dead ancestors, or his multitude of motionless statues; do his country in the day of battle? What could such a general do, but in his trepidation and inexperience, have recourse to some inferior commander for direction in difficulties to which he was not himself equal? Thus your Patrician general would in fact have a general over him; so that the acting commander would still be a Plebian. So true is this, my countrymen, that I have, myself, known those who have been chosen Consuls, begin then to read the history of their own country, of which, till that time, they were totally ignorant, that is, they first obtained the employment, and then bethought themselves of the qualifications necessary for the proper discharge of it.

I submit to your judgment, Romans, on which side the advantage lies, when a comparison is made between Patrician haughtiness, and Plebian experience. The very actions which they have only read, I have partly seen, and partly myself achieved. What they know by reading, I know by action. They are pleased to slight my mean birth; I despise their mean characters. Want of birth and fortune is the objection against me; want of personal worth, against them. But are not all men of the same species? What can make a difference between one man and another, but the endowments of the mind? For my part, I shall always look upon the bravest man as the noblest man. Suppose it were enquired of the fathers of such Patricians as Albius and Bestia, whether, if they had their choice, they would desire sons of their character, or of mine? what would they answer, but that they should wish the worthiest to be their sons? If the Patricians have reason to despise me, let them likewise despise their ancestors, whose nobility was the fruit of their virtue. Do they envy the honors bestowed upon me? let them envy, likewise, my labors, my abstinence, and the dangers I have undergone for my country, by which I have acquired them. But those worthless men lead such a life of inactivity, as if they despised any honors you can bestow; whilst they aspire to honors, as if they had deserved

them by the most industrious virtue. They lay claim to the rewards of activity, for their having enjoyed the pleasures of luxury. Yet none can be more lavish than they are in praise of their ancestors. And they imagine they honor themselves by celebrating their forefathers ; whereas they do the very contrary : for, as much as their ancestors were distinguished for their virtues, so much are they disgraced by their vices. The glory of ancestors cast a light, indeed, upon their posterity ; but it only serves to show what the descendants are. It alike exhibits to public view their degeneracy and their worth. I own I cannot boast of the deeds of my forefathers ; but I hope I may answer the cavils of the Patricians by standing up in defence of what I have myself done.

Observe now, my countrymen, the injustice of the Patricians. They arrogate to themselves honors on account of the exploits done by their forefathers, whilst they will not allow me the due praise for performing the very same sort of actions in my own person. He has no statues, they cry, of his family. He can trace no venerable line of ancestors. What then ? Is it matter of more praise to disgrace ones illustrious ancestors, than to become illustrious by one's own good behavior ? What if I can show no statues of my family ? I can show the standards, the armor, and the trappings, which I have myself taken from the vanquished : I can show the scars of those wounds, which I have received by facing the enemies of my country. These are my statues. These are the honors I boast of. Not left me by inheritance, as theirs ; but earned by toil, by abstinence, by valor ; amidst clouds of dust and seas of blood ; scenes of action, where those effeminate Patricians, who endeavor by indirect means to depreciate me in your esteem, have never dared to show their faces.

D I A L O G U E S.

Scene between General SAVAGE and Miss WALSHINGHAM ; in which the courtship is carried on in such an ambiguous manner, that the General mistakes her consent to marry his son, Capt. SAVAGE, for consent to marry himself.

MISS WAL. **G**ENERAL Savage, your most humble servant.

GEN. SAV. My dear Miss Walsingham, it is rather cruel that you should be left at home by yourself, and yet I am greatly rejoiced to find you at present without company.

MISS WAL. I can't but think myself in the best company, when I have the honor of your conversation, General.

GEN. You flatter me, too much, Madam ; yet I am come to talk to you on a serious affair ; an affair of importance to me and yourself. Have you leisure to favor me with a short audience, if I beat a parley ?

MISS WAL. Any thing of importance to you, Sir, is always sufficient to command my leisure.

'Tis as the Captain suspected—*aside*.

GEN. You tremble, my lovely girl, but don't be alarmed ; for tho' my business is of an important nature, I hope it will not be of a disagreeable one.

MISS WAL. And yet I am greatly agitated—*aside*.

GEN. Soldiers, Miss Walsingham, are said to be generally favored by the kind protection of the ladies.

MISS WAL. The ladies are not without gratitude, Sir, to those who devote their lives peculiarly to the service of their country.

GEN. Generously said, Madam : Then give me leave, without any masked battery, to ask, if the heart of an honest soldier is a prize at all worth your acceptance.

MISS WAL. Upon my word, Sir, there is no masked battery in this question.

GEN. I am as fond of a coup de main, Madam, in love as in war, and hate the tedious method of sapping a town, when there is a possibility of entering it sword in hand.

MISS WAL. Why really, Sir, a woman may as well

know her own mind when she is first summoned by the trumpet of a lover, as when she undergoes all the tiresome formality of a siege. You see I have caught your own mode of conversing, General.

GEN. And a very great compliment I consider it, Madam. But now that you have candidly confessed an acquaintance with your own mind, answer me with that frankness for which every body admires you so much. Have you any objections to change the name of Walsingham?

MISS WAL. Why then frankly, General, I say, no.

GEN. Ten thousand thanks to you for this kind declaration.

MISS WAL. I hope you won't think it a forward one.

GEN. I'd sooner see my son run away in the day of battle—I'd sooner think Lord Russel was bribed by Lewis the XIVth; and sooner vilify the memory of Algernon Sidney.

MISS WAL. How unjust it was ever to suppose the General a tyrannical father.—[*aside*.

GEN. You have told me condescendingly, Miss Walsingham, that you have no objection to change your name; I have but one question more to ask.

MISS WAL. Pray propose it, Sir.

GEN. Would the name of Savage be disagreeable to you? Speak frankly again, my dear girl.

MISS WAL. Why then again I frankly say, no.

GEN. You are too good to me.—Torrington thought I should meet with a repulse,—[*aside*.

MISS WAL. Have you communicated this business to the Captain, Sir?

GEN. No, my dear madam, I did not think that at all necessary. I propose that he shall be married in a few days.

MISS WAL. What, whether I will or no?

GEN. O you can have no objection!

MISS WAL. I must be consulted, however about the day, General; but nothing in my power shall be wanting to make him happy.

GEN. Obliging loveliness!

MISS WAL. You may imagine, that if I had not been previously impress'd in favor of your proposal, it would not have met with my concurrence so readily.

GEN. Then you own I had a previous friend in the garri-
son.

MISS WAL. I don't blush to acknowledge it, Sir, when I consider the accomplishments of the object.

GEN. O this is too much, Madam; the principal merit of the object is his passion for Miss Walsingham.

MISS WAL. Don't say that, General, I beg of you; for I don't think there are many women in the kingdom, who could behold him with indifference.

GEN. Ah, you flattering angel!—and yet, by the memory of Marlborough, my lovely girl, it was the idea of a prepossession on your part, which encouraged me to hope for a favorable reception.

MISS WAL. Then I must have been very indiscreet, for I labored to conceal that prepossession as much as possible.

GEN. You could not conceal it from me; the female heart is a field I am thoroughly acquainted with.

MISS WAL. I doubt not your knowledge of the female heart, General; but as we now understand one another so perfectly, you will give me leave to retire.

GEN. One word my dear creature, and no more; I shall wait on you some time to day about the necessary settlement.

MISS WAL. You must do as you please, General; you are invincible in every thing.

GEN. And if you please we will keep every thing a profound secret, till the articles are all settled, and the definitive treaty ready for execution.

MISS WAL. You may be sure that delicacy will not suffer me to be communicative on the subject, Sir.

GEN. Then you leave every thing to my management.

MISS WAL. I can't trust a more noble negotiator.

[goes out.]

GEN. The day is my own, (*sings*) Britons, strike home; strike home.



Scene between General SAVAGE, Capt. SAVAGE, Miss WALSINGHAM, and TORRINGTON, a lawyer, in which the General discovers his mistake.

CAPT. SAV. **N**AY, but my dearest Miss Walsingham, the extenuation of my own conduct to Belville made it absolutely necessary for me to discover my engagements with you: and as happiness is now so fortunately in our reach, I flatter myself you will be prevailed up-

on to forgive an error which proceeded only from extravagance of love.

MISS WAL. To think me capable of such an action, Captain Savage! I am terrified at the idea of a union with you; and it is better for a woman at any time, to sacrifice an insolent lover, than to accept of a suspicious husband.

CAPT. In the happiest union, my dearest creature, there must always be something to overlook on both sides.

MISS WAL. Very civil, truly.

CAPT. Pardon me, my life, for this frankness: and recollect, that if the lover has, through misconception, been unhappily guilty, he brings a husband altogether reformed to your hands.

MISS WAL. Well, I see I must forgive you at last; so I may as well make a merit of necessity, you provoking creature.

CAPT. And may I hope indeed for the blessing of this hand.

MISS WAL. Why, you wretch, would you have me force it upon you? I think after what I have said, a soldier might have ventured to take it without further ceremony.

CAPT. Angelic creature! thus I seize it as my lawful prize.

MISS WAL. Well, but now you have obtained this inestimable prize, Captain, give me leave again to ask if you have had a certain explanation with the General.

CAPT. How can you doubt it?

MISS WAL. And is he really impatient for our marriage?

CAPT. 'Tis incredible how earnest he is.

MISS WAL. What! did he tell you of his interview with me this evening when he brought Mr. Torrington?

CAPT. He did.

MISS WAL. O, then I can have no doubt.

CAPT. If a shadow of doubt remains, here he comes to remove it. Joy, my dear Sir, joy a thousand times!

Enter General SAVAGE and TORRINGTON.

GEN. What my dear boy, have you carried the day?

MISS WAL. I have been weak enough to indulge him with a victory, indeed, General.

GEN. Fortune favors the brave, Torrington.

TOR. I congratulate you heartily on this decree, General.

GEN. This had nearly proved a day of disappointment,

but the stars have fortunately turned it in my favor, and now I reap the rich reward of my victory.

CAPT. And here I take her from you as the greatest good which Heaven can send me.

MISS WAL. O Captain!

GEN. *You* take her as the greatest good which Heaven can send *you*, Sirrah! I take her as the greatest good which Heaven can send *me*: And now what have *you* to say to her?

MISS WAL. General! Savage!

TOR. Here will be a fresh injunction to stop proceedings.

MISS WAL. Are we never to have done with mistakes?

GEN. What mistakes can have happened now, sweetest? you delivered up your dear hand to me this moment!

MISS WAL. True, Sir; but I thought you were going to bestow my dear hand upon this dear Gentleman.

GEN. How! that dear Gentleman.

CAPT. I am Thunder-struck!

TOR. Fortune favors the brave, General, none but the brave.—[*Laughingly*.]

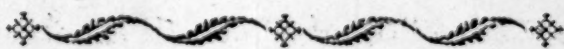
GEN. So the covert way is cleared at last; and you have all along imagined that I was negotiating for this fellow, when I was gravely soliciting for myself.

MISS WAL. No other idea, Sir, ever entered my imagination.

TOR. General, noble minds should never despair.

[*Laughingly*.]

GEN. Well, my hopes are all blown up to the moon at once, and I shall be the laughing stock of the whole town.



Scene between Mrs. BELVILLE, Miss WALSINGHAM and Lady RACHEL MILDEW.—ON DUELLING.

MRS. BEL. **W**HERE is the generosity, where is the [alone.] sense, where is the shame of men, to find pleasure in pursuits which they cannot remember without the deepest horror; which they cannot follow without the meanest fraud; and which they cannot effect without consequences the most dreadful? The greatest triumph which a libertine can ever experience, is too despicable to be envied; 'tis at best nothing but a victory over his hu-

manity; and if he is a husband, he must be doubly tortured on the wheel of recollection.

Enter Miss WALSINGHAM and Lady RACHEL MILDEW.

MISS WAL. My dear Mrs. Belville, I am extremely unhappy to see you so distressed.

LADY RACH. Now I am extremely glad to see her so; for if she were not greatly distressed, it would be monstrously unnatural.

MRS. BEL. O Matilda! my husband! my children.

MISS WAL. Don't weep, my dear! don't weep! pray be comforted, all may end happily. Lady Rachel beg of her not to cry so.

LADY RACH. Why, you are crying yourself, Miss Walsingham. And tho I think it out of character to encourage her tears, I cannot help keeping you company.

MRS. BEL. O, why is not some effectual method contrived to prevent this horrible practice of duelling.

LADY RACH. I'll expose it on the stage, since the law now a-days kindly leaves the whole cognizance of it to the theater.

MISS WAL. And yet, if the laws against it were as well enforced as the laws against destroying the game, perhaps it would be equally for the benefit of the kingdom.

MISS BEL. No law will ever be effectual till the custom is rendered infamous. Wives must shriek! mothers must agonize! orphans must be multiplied! unless some blessed hand strip the fascinating glare from honorable murder, and bravely expose the idol who is worshiped thus in blood. While it is disreputable to obey the laws, we cannot look for reformation. But if the duellist is once banished from the presence of his sovereign; if he is for life excluded the confidence of his country; if a mark of indelible disgrace is stamped upon him, the sword of public justice will be the sole chastiser of wrongs: trifles will not be punished with death, and offences really meriting such a punishment will be reserved for the only proper revenger, the common executioner.

LADY RACH. I could not have expressed myself better on this subject, my dear; but till such a hand, as you talk of, is found, the best will fall into the error of the times.

MISS WAL. Yes, and butcher each other like madmen, for fear their courage should be suspected by fools.

Colonel RIVERS and Sir HARRY.

SIR HAR. COLONEL, your most obedient ; I am come upon the old business ; for unless I am allowed to entertain hopes of Miss Rivers, I shall be the most miserable of all human beings.

RIV. Sir Harry, I have already told you by letter, and I now tell you personally, I cannot listen to your proposals !

SIR HAR. No, Sir ?

RIV. No, Sir ; I have promised my daughter to Mr. Sidney : do you know that, Sir ?

SIR HAR. I do ; but what then ! Engagements of this kind, you know—

RIV. So then you do know I have promised her to Mr. Sidney ?

SIR HAR. I do ; but I also know that matters are not finally settled between Mr. Sidney and you ; and I moreover know, that his fortune is by no means equal to mine, therefore—

RIV. Sir Harry, let me ask you one question before you make your consequence.

SIR HAR. A thousand if you please, Sir.

RIV. Why then, Sir, let me ask you, what you have ever observed in me or my conduct, that you desire me so familiarly to break my word ? I thought, Sir, you considered me as a man of honor.

SIR HAR. And so I do, Sir, a man of the nicest honor.

RIV. And yet, Sir, you ask me to violate the sanctity of my word ; and tell me directly that it is my interest to be a rascal.—

SIR HAR. I really don't understand you, Colonel : I thought I was talking to a man who knew the world ; and as you have not signed—

RIV. Why, this is mending matters with a witness ! And so you think because I am not legally bound, I am under no necessity of keeping my word ! Sir Harry, laws were never made for men of honor ; *they* want no bond but the rectitude of their own sentiments ; and laws are of no use but to bind the villains of society.

SIR HAR. Well ! but my dear Colonel, if you have no regard for me, shew some little regard for your daughter.

RIV. I shew the greatest regard for my daughter, by giving her to a man of honor, and I must not be insulted with any further repetition of your proposals.

SIR HAR. Insult you, Colonel! Is the offer of my alliance an insult? Is my readiness to make what settlements you think proper—

RIV. Sir Henry, I should consider the offer of a kingdom an insult, if it were to be purchased by the violation of my word. Besides, tho my daughter shall never go a beggar to the arms of her husband, I would rather see her happy than rich; and if she has enough to provide handsomely for a young family, and something to spare for the exigences of a worthy friend, I shall think her as affluent as if she were mistress of Mexico.

SIR HAR. Well Colonel, I have done; but I believe—

RIV. Well Sir Harry, and as our conference is done, we will, if you please, retire to the ladies: I shall be always glad of your acquaintance, tho I cannot receive you as a son-in-law; for a union of interest I look upon as a union of dishonor, and consider a marriage for money, at best but a legal prostitution.



*Scene between SHYLOCK and TUBAL.**

Shy. **H**OW now, Tubal! what news from Genoa? Have you heard any thing of my back sliding daughter?

Tub. I often came where I heard of her, but could not find her.

Shy. Why there, there, there, a diamond gone that cost me two thousand ducats at Frankfort! The curse never fell upon the nation till now! I never felt it before! Two thousand ducats, in that and other precious jewels! I wish she lay dead at my feet! No news of them! and I know not what spent in the search. Loss upon loss. The thief gone with so much, and so much to find the thief; and no satisfaction, no revenge; no ill luck stirring but what lights on my shoulders.

Tub. O yes, other men have ill luck too, Antonio, as I heard in Genoa—

Shy. (*Interrupting him*) What, has he had ill luck?

Tub. Has had a ship cast away coming from Tripoli.

Shy. Thank fortune! Is it true? Is it true?

* Shylock had sent Tubal after his daughter, who had eloped from his house. Antonio was a merchant, hated by Shylock.

Tub. I spoke with some of the sailors that escaped from the wreck.

Shy. I thank you, good Tubal. Good news! Good news! What, in Genoa, you spoke with them.

Tub. Your daughter, as I heard, spent twenty ducats in one night.

Shy. You stick a dagger in me, Tubal. I never shall see my gold again. Twenty ducats in one night! Twenty ducats! O father Abraham!

Tub. There came several of Antonio's creditors in my company to Venice, who say he cannot but break.

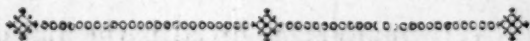
Shy. I am glad on't. I'll plague him; I'll torture him; I am glad on't.

Tub. One of them shewed me a ring he had of your daughter for a monkey.

Shy. Out upon her! You torture me, Tubal! It was my ruby. I would not have given it for as many monkeys as could stand together upon Realto.

Tub. Antonio is certainly undone.

Shy. Ay, ay, there is some comfort in that. Go, Tubal, engage an officer. Tell him to be ready; I'll be revenged on Antonio. I'll wash my hands to the elbows in his heart's blood.



JAFFIER had married the daughter of PRIULI, without his consent; and being reduced to poverty, he applies to PRIULI for help, in his distress, and receives the following treatment:

Pri. **N**O more! I'll hear no more! Be gone, and leave me.

Jaf. Not hear me! By my sufferings but you shall. My Lord! I am not that abject wretch you think me. Where's the difference that throws me so far behind you, that I must not speak to you?

Pri. Have you not wronged me?

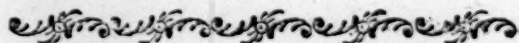
Jaf. Could my nature ever have endured the thought of doing wrong, I need not now have bent myself thus low to gain a hearing from a cruel father.

Pri. I say you have wronged me in the nicest point, the honor of my house. You can't defend your baseness to me. When you first came home from travel, I, with open arms, received you. Pleased with your seeming virtues, I sought to raise you. My house, my table, fortune, all was yours. And in return you treacherously strove to undo me; de-

ceived the joy of my declining age, my only child, and stole her from my bosom.

Jas. Is this your gratitude to him who saved your daughter's life? You know that but for me you had been childless. I restored her to you when sunk amidst the waves; I hazarded my life for hers, and she has richly paid me with her generous love.

Pri. You stole her from me! like a thief you stole her; at dead of night, that fatal hour, you chose to rifle me of all my heart held dear. But may your joy in her prove false as mine. May the hard hand of pinching poverty oppress and grind you; till at length you find the curse of disobedience all your fortune. Home, and be humble. Study to retrench. Discharge the lazy vermin of your hall, those pageants of your folly. Reduce the glittering trappings of your wife, to humble weeds, fit for your narrow state. Then to some suburb cottage both retire; and, with your starving brats, enjoy your misery. Home, home, I say.



*Scene between Lord PETER, MARTIN, and JACK.**

Pet. **B**READ, gentlemen, bread is the staff of life. In bread is contained the quintessence of beef, mutton, veal, venison, Partridge, plumb pudding and custard; and thro' the whole is diffused a wholesome and fermented liquor. Therefore he who eats bread, at the same time eats the best of food, and drinks the best of liquors. Come on, brothers, the cause is good, fall to, and spare not. Here is a shoulder of excellent mutton† as ever was cut with knife.

But now my hand is in, I'll help you myself. Young people are bashful. Come, brother Martin, let me help you to this slice:

Mar. My Lord, I doubt, with great submission, here is some little mistake.

* By Peter is meant the Pope; by Martin, the Lutheran Church; and by Jack, the Calvinists. The design of this Dialogue, is to ridicule the Doctrine of Transubstantiation, the arrogance of the Pope, and the evils of Persecution.

† Pointing to a brown loaf on the table. This conversation is supposed to be at table, where the speakers ought to sit, in order to perform to the life. But this may be dispensed with, as my design is to teach children to read and speak, rather than to act.

Pet. What, you are merry ? Come then, let us hear this jest your head is so big with.

Mar. No jest, indeed, my Lord. But unless I am very much deceived, your lordship was pleased, a little while ago to drop a word about mutton, and I should be glad to see it upon the table.

Pet. How ! I don't comprehend you.

Jack. Why, my Lord, my brother Martin, I suppose, is hungry, and longs to see the shoulder of mutton you spoke of, come to the table.

Pet. Pray explain yourselves, gentlemen. Either you are both out of your wits, or are disposed to be merry a little unseasonably. You had better keep your jokes till after dinner.

Mar. What then, my Lord, is this brown loaf a shoulder of mutton all this while ?

Pet. Pray leave off your impertinence, and eat your victuals, if you please ; I am not disposed to relish your wit at present.

Mar. Well, my Lord, may I be foused over head and ears in a horse pond, if it seems to my eyes, my fingers, or my nose, either less or more, than a slice of stale sixpenny brown loaf.

Jack. If ever I saw a shoulder of mutton in my life look so like a six-penny brown loaf, I am an old basket woman.

Pet. Look you, gentlemen, to convince you what a couple of blind, positive, ignorant puppies you are, I will use but one plain argument. May you both be eternally miserable, if you don't believe this to be a shoulder of as good mutton as ever was sold in market.

Mar. Why, truly, upon more mature consideration—

Jack. Why, ay, now I have thought more of the matter, your Lordship seems to be in the right.

Pet. O now you are come to yourselves. Boy, fill me a bumper of claret. Come, brothers, here is good health to you both.

Mar. and Jack. Thank your good Lordship, and should be glad to pledge you.

Pet. That you shall, my boys. I am not a man to refuse any thing in reason. A moderate glass of wine is a cordial. There* is a bumper a piece for you. True natural juice

* Giving them a crust each.

of the grape. None of your nasty balderdash vintner's brewing. What now,* are you at your doubts again? Here boy. Call neighbor Dominic † the blacksmith here. Bid him bring his tongs with him, red hot; d'ye hear? I'll teach you to doubt.

Mar. Come, Jack. This house is like to be too hot for you and me. He is quite raving mad. Lets get away ‡ as fast as we can.

Jack. A plague on his crazy head. If ever I put my nose within his door again, may it be pinched off in good earnest.



JUBA and SYPHAX.

JUB. **S**YPHAX, I joy to meet you thus alone.
I have observ'd of late thy looks are fallen,
O'er cast with gloomy cares and discontent;
Then tell me, Syphax, I conjure thee, tell me
What are the thoughts that knit thy brow in frowns.
And turn thine eye thus coldly on thy prince,

SYPH. 'Tis not my talent to conceal my thoughts,
Or carry smiles or sun shine in my face,
When discontent sits heavy at my heart:
I havenot yet so much of the Roman in me.

JUB. Why dost thou cast out such ungenerous terms
Against the lords and sovereigns of the world?
Dost not thou see mankind fall down before them,
And own the force of their superior virtue?
Is there a nation in the wilds of Afric,
Amidst our barren rocks and burning sands,
That does not tremble at the Roman name?

SYPH. Gods! where is the worth that sets this people up
Above your own Numidia's tawny sons?
Do they with tougher sinews bend the bow?
Or flies the javelin swifter to its mark,
Launch'd from the vigor of a Roman arm?
Who, like our active African, instructs
The fiery steed, and trains him to his hand?
Or guides in troops, the embattled elephant,
Laden with war? These, these are arts, my prince,

* Observing them to stare.

† St. Dominic, the inventor of the Inquisition.

‡ Separation of the protestant from the Romish Church.

In which your Zama does not stoop to Rome,

JUB. These all are virtues of a meaner rank,
Perfections that are placed in bones and nerves,
A Roman soul is bent on higher views;
To civilize the rude unpolish'd world,
To lay it under the restraint of laws;
To make man mild, and sociable to man;
To cultivate the wild licentious savage
With wisdom, discipline, and liberal arts;
The establishments of life: virtues like these
Make human nature shine, reform the soul,
And break our fierce barbarians into men.

SYPH. Patience, just heavens!—Excuse an old man's
What are those wond'rous civilizing arts, [warmth.
This Roman polish, and this smooth behavior,
That render man thus tractible and tame?

Are they not only to disguise our passions,
To set our looks at variance with our thoughts,
To check the starts and sallies of the soul,
And break off all its commerce with the tongue?
In short, to change us into other creatures,
Than what our nature and the Gods design'd us?

JUB. To strike thee dumb, turn up thy eyes to Cato!
There may'st thou see to what a godlike height
The Roman virtues lift up mortal man.
While good and just, and anxious for his friends,
He's still severely bent against himself;
Renouncing sleep, and rest, and food and ease,
He strives with thirst and hunger, toil and heat;
And when his fortune sets before him all
The pomp and pleasure that his soul can wish,
His rigid virtue will accept of none.

SYPH. Believe me, prince, there's not an African
That traverses our vast Numidian deserts
In quest of prey, and lives upon his bow,
But better practises these boasted virtues.
Coarse as his meals, the fortune of the chase,
Amidst the running stream he slakes his thirst,
Toils all the day, and at the approach of night
On the first friendly bank he throws him down,
Or rests his head upon a rock till morn:
Then rises fresh, pursues the wonted game,

And if the following day he chance to find
A new repast, or an untasted spring,
Blesses his stars, and thinks it luxury.

JUB. Thy prejudices, Syphax, won't discern
What virtues grow from ignorance, and what from choice,
Nor how the hero differs from the brute.

But grant that others could with equal glory
Look down on pleasures, and the baits of sense;
Where shall we find the man that bears affliction,
Great and majestic in his griefs, like Cato?
Heavens! with what strength, what steadiness of mind,
He triumphs in the midst of all his sufferings!
How does he rise against a load of woes,
And thank the gods that threw the weight upon him!

SYPH. 'Tis pride, rank pride, and haughtiness of soul:
I think the Romans call it stoicism.

Had not your royal father thought so highly
Of Roman virtue, and of Cato's cause,
He had not fallen by a slave's hand inglorious:
Nor would his slaughter'd army now have lain
On Afric's sands, disfigur'd with their wounds,
To gorge the wolves and vultures of Numidia.

JUB. Why dost thou call my sorrows up afresh!
My father's name brings tears into mine eyes.

SYPH. Oh, that you'd profit by your father's ills!

JUB. What wouldst thou have me do?

SYPH. Abandon Cato.

JUB. Syphax, I should be more than twice an orphan by
such a loss.

SYPH. Ay, there's the tie that binds you!
You long to call him father. Marcia's charms
Work in your heart unseen, and plead for Cato.
No wonder you are deaf to all I say.

JUB. Syphax, your zeal becomes importunate;
I've hitherto permitted it to rave,
And talk at large; but learn to keep it in,
Lest it should take more freedom than I'll give it.

SYPH. Sir, your great father never used me thus.
Alas, he's dead! but can you e'er forget
The tender sorrows and the pangs of nature,
The fond embraces, and repeated blessings,
Which you drew from him in your last farewell?
Still must I cherish the dear sad remembrance,

At once to torture, and to please my soul.
The good old king at parting wrung my hand,
(His eyes brim full of tears) then sighing cry'd ;
Pr'thee be careful of my son !——His grief
Swell'd up so high, he could not utter more.

JUB. Alas, the story melts away my soul !
The best of fathers ! how shall I discharge
The gratitude and duty which I owe him ?

SYPH. By laying up his counsels in your heart.

JUB. His counsels bade me yield to thy directions :
Then, Syphax, chide me in severest terms ;
Vent all thy passion, and I'll stand its shock,
Calm and unruffled as a summer's sea,
When not a breath of wind flies o'er its surface.

SYPH. Alas, my prince, I'll guide you to your safety.

JUB. I do believe thou wouldst ; but tell me how.

SYPH. Fly from the fate of Cæsar's foes.

JUB. My father scorn'd to do it.

SYPH. And therefore dy'd.

JUB. Better to die ten thousand deaths,
'Than wound my honor.

SYPH. Rather say, your love.

JUB. Syphax, I've promis'd to preserve my temper ;
Why wilt thou urge me to confess a flame
I long have stifled, and would fain conceal ?

SYPH. Believe me, prince, 'tho hard to conquer love,
'Tis easy to divert and break its force :

Absence might cure it, or a second mistress
Light up another flame, and put out this.

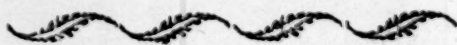
The glowing dames of Zama's royal court
Have faces flush'd with more exalted charms ;
The sun that rolls his chariot o'er their heads,
Works up more fire and color in their cheeks :
Were you with these, my prince, you'd soon forget
The pale, unripen'd beauties of the North.

JUB. 'Tis not a set of features, nor complexion,
The tincture of the skin, that I admire.
Beauty soon grows familiar to the lover,
Fades in his eyes, and passes upon the sense.
The virtuous Marcia towers above her sex :
True, she is fair (Oh, how divinely fair !)
But still the lovely maid improves her charms,
With inward greatness, unaffected wisdom,

And sanctity of manners. Cato's soul
Shines out in every thing she acts or speaks.
While winning mildness and attractive smiles
Dwell in her looks, and with becoming grace
Softens the rigor of her father's virtues.

[praise!]

SYPH. How, does your tongue grow wanton in her



WOLSEY and CROMWELL.

WOL. **F**AREWELL, a long farewell to all my greatness!
This is the state of man: To-day he puts forth
The tender leaves of hope; to-morrow blossoms,
And bears his blushing honors thick upon him;
The third day comes a frost, a killing frost,
And when he thinks, good easy man full surely
His greatness is a ripening, nips his shoot;
And then he falls as I do. I have ventur'd
Like little wanton boys that swim on bladders,
These many summers in a sea of glory,
But far beyond my depth; my high-blown pride
At length broke under me; and now has left me,
Weary and old with service, to the mercy
Of a rude stream, that must forever hide me.
Vain pomp and glory of the world, I hate you!
I feel my heart now open'd. Oh how wretched
Is that poor man that hangs on prince's favors!
There is, betwixt that smile he would aspire to,
That sweet aspect of princes, and his ruin,
More pangs and fears than war or women have;
And when he falls, he falls like Lucifer,
Never to rise again.

[Enter Cromwell.]

Why how now, Cromwell?

CROM. I have not power to speak, Sir.

WOL. What amazed
At my misfortunes? Can thy spirit wonder
A great man should decline? Nay, if you weep,
Im' fallen indeed.

CROM. How does your grace?

WOL. Why, well;
Never so truly happy, my good Cromwell.
I know myself now, and I feel, within me,
A peace above all earthly dignities;

A still and quiet conscience. The king has cured me,
 I humbly thank his Grace ; and from these shoulders,
 These ruin'd pillars, out of pity taken
 A load would sink a navy, too much honor.
 O, 'tis a burthen, Cromwell 'tis a burthen.
 Too heavy for a man that hopes for heaven !

CROM. I'm glad your Grace has made that right use of it.

WOL. I hope I have : I'm able now, methinks,
 Out of a fortitude of soul I feel,
 To endure more miseries, and greater far,
 Than many weak-hearted enemies dare offer.
 What news abroad ?

CROM. The heaviest and the worst,
 Is your displeasure with the king.

WOL. God bless him !

CROM. The next is, that Sir Thomas More is chosen
 Lord Chancellor in your place.

WOL. That's somewhat sudden——
 But he's a learned man. May he continue
 Long in his highness' favor and do justice
 For truth's sake and his conscience ; that his bones,
 When he has run his course, and sleeps in blessings,
 May have a tomb of orphan's tears wept over him !
 What more ?

CROM. That Cranmer is return'd with welcome.
 Install'd Lord Archbishop of Canterbury.

WOL. That's news indeed !

CROM. Last, that the Lady Anne,
 Whom the king hath in secrecy long married,
 This day was view'd in open as the Queen,
 Going to Chapel ; and the voice is now
 Only about her coronation. [Cromwell.]

WOL. There was the weight that pull'd me down ; O
 The king has gone beyond me : all my glories
 In that one woman I have lost forever.
 No sun shall ever usher forth my honors,
 Or gild again the noble troops that waited
 Upon my smiles. Go, get thee from me, Cromwell ;
 I am a poor fallen man, unworthy now
 To be thy lord and master. Seek the king,
 ('That sun I pray may never set) I've told him
 What, and how true thou art ; he will advance thee :

Some little memory of me will stir him,
 (I know his noble nature): not to let
 Thy hopeful service perish too. Go Cromwell,
 Neglect him not; make use now, and provide
 For thine own future safety.

CROM. O my Lord,
 Must I then leave you? Must I needs forego
 So good, so noble, and so true a master?
 Bear witness, all that have not hearts of iron,
 With what a sorrow Cromwell leaves his lord.
 The King shall have my service: but my prayers,
 For ever, and for ever, shall be your's.

WOL. Cromwell, I did not think to shed a tear
 In all my miseries: but thou hast forced me,
 Out of thy honest truth, to play the woman——
 Let's dry our eyes; and thus far hear me, Cromwell,
 And when I am forgotten, as I shall be,
 And sleep in dull cold marble, where mention
 Of me must no more be heard: say then I taught thee;
 Say, Wolfey, that once rode the waves of glory,
 And sounded all the depths and shoals of honor,
 Found thee a way, out of his wreck, to rise in;
 A sure and safe one, tho thy master mis'd it.
 Mark but my fall, and that which ruin'd me:
 Cromwell, I charge thee fling away ambition;
 By that sin fell the angels; how can man then
 (Tho the image of his Maker) hope to win by it?
 Love thyself last; cherish those hearts that wait thee!
 Corruption wins not more than honesty.
 Still in thy right hand carry gentle peace,
 To silence envious tongues. Be just and fear not.
 Let all the ends thou aim'st at, be thy Country's,
 Thy God's and Truth's: then if thou fall'st, O Cromwell,
 Thou fall'st a blessed martyr. Serve the King—
 And pr'thee lead me in——
 There, take an inventory of all I have;
 To the last penny, 'tis the King's. My robe,
 And my integrity to heav'n, is all
 I dare to call my own. O Cromwell, Cromwell,
 Had I but serv'd my God with half the zeal
 I serv'd my king, he would not in my age
 Have left me naked to mine enemies.

CROM. Good Sir, have patience.

WOL. So I have. Farewell
The hopes of court ! My hopes in heaven do dwell.



The Quarrel of BRUTUS and CASSIUS.

CAS. **T**HAT you have wrong'd me doth appear in this :
You have condemn'd and noted Lucius Pella,
For taking bribes here of the Sardians ;
Wherein my letter (praying on his side,
Because I knew the man) was slighted of.

BRU. You wrong'd yourself to write in such a case.

CAS. In such a time as this, it is not meet
That every nice offence should bear its comment.

BRU. Yet let me tell you, Cassius, you yourself
Are much condemned to have an itching palm,
To sell and mart your offices for gold,
To undeservers.

CAS. I an itching palm !
You know that you are Brutus that speak this,
Or, be assured, this speech were else your last.

BRU. The name of Cassius honors this corruption,
And chastisement doth therefore hide its head.

CAS. Chastisement !

BRU. Remember March, the ides of March remember ;
Did not great Julius bleed for Justice sake ?
What villain touch'd his body, that did stab,
And not for justice ? What, shall one of us,
That struck the foremost man of all this world,
But for supporting robbers ; shall we now
Contaminate our fingers with these bribes ?
And sell the mighty meed of our large honors
For so much trash as may be grasped thus ?
I would rather be a dog, and bay the moon,
Than such a Roman.

CAS. Brutus, bay not me,
I'll not endure it ; you forget yourself,
To hedge me in ; I am a soldier, I,
Older in practice, abler than yourself
To make conditions.

BRU. Go to ; you are not, Cassius.

CAS. I am,

BRU. I say you are not.

CAS. Urge me no more ; I shall forget myself—
Have mind upon your health—tempt me no farther.

BRU. Away, slight man !

CAS. Is it possible ?

BRU. Hear me, for I will speak ;
Must I give way and room to your rash choler ?
Shall I be frightened when a madman stares ?

CAS. Must I endure all this ?

BRU. All this ? ay more. Fret till your proud heart
Go tell your servants how cholerick you are, [breaks,
And make your bondmen tremble. Must I budge ?
Must I observe you ? Must I stand and crouch
Under your testy humor ? Be assured,
You shall digest the venom of your spleen,
Tho it do split you ; for, from this day forth,
I'll use you for my mirth, yea, for my laughter,
When you are waspish.

CAS. Is it come to this ?

BRU. You say, you are a better soldier ;
Let it appear so ; make your vaunting true,
And it shall please me well. For my own part,
I shall be glad to learn of noble men.

CAS. You wrong me every way—you wrong me, Brutus.
I said, an elder soldier, not a better :
Did I say better ?

BRU. If you did, I care not.

CAS. When Cæsar liv'd, he durst not thus have mov'd me.

BRU. Peace, peace, you durst not so have tempted him.

CAS. I durst not !

BRU. No.

CAS. What ! durst not tempt him ?

BRU. For your life you durst not.

CAS. Do not presume too much upon my love ;
I may do what I shall be sorry for.

BRU. You have done what you shall be sorry for,
There is no terror, Cassius, in your threats ;
For I am arm'd so strong in honesty,
That they pass by me as the idle wind,
Which I respect not. I did send to you
For certain sums of gold, which you deny'd me ;
For I can raise no money by vile means.
By heaven, I had rather coin my heart,
And drop my blood for drahtmas, than to wring,

From the hard hand of peasants, their vile trash,
 By any indirection. I did send
 To you for gold to pay my legions,
 Which you denied me; was that done like Cassius?
 Should I have answered Caius Cassius so?
 When Marcus Brutus grows so covetous,
 To lock such rascal counters from his friends,
 Be ready gods, with all your thunderbolts,
 Dash him to pieces.

CAS. I denied you not.

BRU. You did.

CAS. I did not—he was but a fool
 That brot my answer back. Brutus hath rived my heart
 A friend should bear a friend's infirmities,
 But Brutus makes mine greater than they are.

BRU. I do not. Still you practise them on me.

CAS. You love me not.

BRU. I do not like your faults.

CAS. A friendly eye could never see such faults.

BRU. A flatterer's would not, tho they do
 Appear as huge a high Olympus.

CAS. Come, Anthony and young Octavius come!
 Revenge yourselves alone on Cassius,
 For Cassius is a-weary of the world;
 Hated by one he loves; braved by his brother;
 Che k'd by a bondman; all his faults observ'd:
 Set in a note book, learn'd and conn'd by rote,
 To cast into my teeth. O I could weep
 My spirit from my eyes!—There is my dagger,
 And here my naked breast—within, a heart
 Dearer than Plutus' mine, richer than gold!
 If that thou need'st a Roman's, take it forth.
 I that deny'd thee gold, will give my heart:
 Strike, as thou didst at Cæsar; for I know,
 When thou didst hate him worse, thou lov'd'st him better
 That ever thou lov'd'st Cassius.

BRU. Sheathe your dagger;
 Be angry when you will, it shall have scope;
 Do what you will, dishonor shall be humor.
 O Cassius, you are yoked with a lamb,
 That carries anger as the flint bears fire;
 Which, much enforced, shews a hasty spark,
 And strait is cold again.

CAS. Hath Cassius lived
 To be but mirth and laughter to his Brutus,
 When grief, and blood, ill tempered vexeth him ?
 BRU. When I spoke that, I was ill tempered too.
 CAS. Do you confess so much ? Give me your hand.
 BRU. And my heart too.
 CAS. O Brutus !
 BRU. What's the matter ?
 CAS. Have you not love enough to bear with me,
 When that rash humor which my mother gave me,
 Makes me forgetful ?
 BRU. Yes, Cassius, and from henceforth
 When you are over earnest with your Brutus,
 He'll think your mother chides, and leave you so.



*A DIALOGUE, written in the year 1776, by Mr. ANDRUS,
 of Yale College, since deceased.*

BLITHE. **H**OW now, Mr. Hunks ? Have you settled
 the controversy with Baxter.

HUNKS. Yes, to a fraction, upon condition that he
 would pay me six per cent. upon all his notes and bonds,
 from the date until they were discharged.

BLITHE. Then it seems you have brought him to your
 own terms ?

HUNKS. Indeed I have ; I would settle with him upon
 no other. Men now-a-days think it a dreadful hardship to
 pay a little interest ; and will quibble a thousand ways to
 fool a body out of their just property ; but I've grown too
 old to be cheated in that manner. I take care to secure the
 interest, as well as the principal. And to prevent any diffi-
 culty, I take new notes every year, and carefully exact inter-
 est upon interest, and add it to the principal.

BLITHE. You dont exact interest upon interest ! This
 looks a little like extortion.

HUNKS. Extortion ? I have already lost more than five
 hundred pounds, by a number of rascally bankrupts. I
 won't trust a farthing of my money without interest upon in-
 terest.

BLITHE. I see I must humor his foible, there's no other
 way to deal with him—[*Aside.*

HUNKS. There's no security, in men's obligations, in

these times. And if I've a sum of money in the hands of those we call good chaps, I'm more plagu'd to get it than 'tis all worth. They would be glad to turn me off with meer rubbish, if they could. I'd rather keep my money in my own chest, then let it out for such small interest as I have for it.

BLITHE. There's something, I confess, in your observations. We never know when we are secure, unless we have our property in our chests, or in lands.

HUNKS. That's true.—I'd rather have my property in lands at three per cent. than in the hands of the best man in this town at six—it is fact. Lands will grow higher when the wars are over.

BLITHE. You're entirely right. I believe if I'd as much money as you, I should be of the same mind.

HUNKS. That's a good disposition. We must all learn to take care of ourselves, these hard times. But I wonder how it happens that your disposition is so different from your son's; he's extremely wild and profuse—I should think it was not possible for you, with all your prudence and dexterity, to get money as fast as he would spend it.

BLITHE. Oh he's young and airy; we must make allowances for such things; we used to do so ourselves when we were young men.

HUNKS. No, you're mistaken; I never wore a neckcloth nor a pair of shoe buckles, on week days, in my life. But that is now become customary among the lowest rank of people.

BLITHE. You have been very singular; there are few men in our age that have been so frugal and saving as you have; but we must always endeavor to conform ourselves a little to the custom of the times. My son is not more extravagant than other young people of his age. He loves to drink a glass of wine sometimes, with his companions, and to appear pretty gaily dressed; but this is only what is natural, and customary for every one. I understand he has formed some connections with your eldest daughter, and I should be fond of the alliance, if I could gain your approbation in the matter.

HUNKS. The custom of the times will undo us all—there's no living in this prodigal age—the young people must have their bottles, their tavern dinners, and dice, while the old ones are made perfect drudges to support their luxury.

BLITHE. Our families, Sir, without doubt would be very happy in such a connection, if you would grant your consent.

HUNKS. I loose all patience when I see the young beaux and fops, strutting about the streets in their laced coats and ruffled shirts, and a thousand other extravagant articles of expense.

BLITHE. Sir, I should be very glad if you would turn your attention to the question I proposed.

HUNKS. 'There's one half of these coxcomical spend-thrifts, that can't pay their taxes and yet they are constantly running into debt, and their prodigality must be supported by poor, honest, laboring men.

BLITHE. This is insufferable ; I'm vex'd at the old fellow's impertinence.—[*Aside*.

HUNKS. The world has got to a strange pass, a very strange pass indeed ; there's no distinguishing a poor man from a rich one, but only by his extravagant dress and supercilious behavior.

BLITHE. I abhor to see a man all mouth and no ears.

HUNKS. All mouth and no ears ! do you mean to insult me to my face ?

BLITHE. I ask your pardon, Sir ; but I've been talking to you this hour, and you have paid me no attention.

HUNKS. Well, and what is this mighty affair upon which you want my opinion.

BLITHE. It is something you have paid but very little attention to, it seems ; I am willing to be heard in my turn, as well as you. I was telling that my son had entered into a treaty of marriage with your eldest daughter, and I desire your consent in the matter.

HUNKS. A treaty of marriage ! why didn't she ask my liberty before she attempted any such thing ? A treaty of marriage ! I won't hear a word of it.

BLITHE. The young couple are very fond of each other, and may perhaps be ruin'd if you cross their inclination.

HUNKS. Then let them be ruin'd. I'll have my daughter to know she shall make no treaties without my consent.

BLITHE. She's of the same mind ; that's what she wants now.

HUNKS. But you say the treaty is already made ; however I'll make it over again.

BLITHE. Well, Sir, the stronger the better.

HUNKS. But I mean to make it void.

BLITHE. I want no trifling in the matter ; the subject is not of a trifling nature. I expect you will give me a direct answer one way or the other.

HUNKS. If that's what you desire, I can tell you at once, I have two very strong objections against the proposal ; one is, I dislike your son ; and the other is, I have determined upon another match for my daughter.

BLITHE. Why do you dislike my son, pray ?

HUNKS. Oh, he's like the rest of mankind, running on in this extravagant way of living. My estate was earned too hardly to be trifled away in such a manner.

BLITHE. Extravagant ! I'm sure he's very far from deserving that character. 'Tis true, he appears genteel and fashionable among people, but he's in good business and lives above-board, and that's sufficient for any man.

HUNKS. 'Tis fashionable, I suppose, to powder and curl at the barber's, an hour or two, before he visits his mistress—to pay six pence or eight pence for brushing his boots—to drink a glass of wine at every tavern—to dine upon fowls dressed in the richest manner :—And he must dirty two or three ruffled shirts in the journey. This is your genteel fashionable way, is it ?

BLITHE. Indeed, Sir, it is a matter of importance to appear decently at such a time, if ever. Would you have him go as you used to, upon the same business, dressed in a long ill-shapen coat, a greasy pair of breeches, and a flap'd hat ; with your oats in one side of your saddle-bags, and your dinner in the other ? this would make an odd appearance indeed, in the present age.

HUNKS. A fig for the appearance, so long as I gain'd my point, and sav'd my money, and consequently my credit. The coat you mention is the same I have on now. 'Tis not so very long as you would represent it to be—[*Measuring the skirts by one leg.*] See, it comes but just below the calf. This is the coat that my father was married in, and I after him. It has been in the fashion five times since it was new, and never was alter'd, and 'tis a pretty good coat yet.

BLITHE. You've a wonderful faculty of saving your money and credit, and keeping in the fashion at the same time. I suppose you mean by saving your credit, that money and credit are inseparably connected.

HUNKS. Yes, that they are : he that has one, need not fear the loss of the other. For this reason, I can't consent to your son's proposal : he's too much of a spendthrift to merit my approbation.

BLITHE. If you call him a spendthrift for this generosity, I desire he may never merit your approbation. A reputation that's gained by saving money in the manner you have mentioned, is, at best but a despicable character.

HUNKS. Do you mean to call my character despicable ?

BLITHE. We won't quarrel about the name, since you are so well contented with the thing.

HUNKS. You're welcome to your opinion ; I would not give a fiddle-stick's end for your good or ill will ; my ideas of reputation are entirely different from your's, or your son's, which are just the same ; for I find you justify him in all his conduct. But as I have determined upon another match for my daughter, I shan't trouble myself about his behavior.

BLITHE. But perhaps your proposed match will be equally disagreeable.

HUNKS. No, I've no apprehension of that. He's a person of a fine genius, and an excellent character.

BLITHE. Sir, I desire to know who this person is, that has such a genius and character, and is so agreeable to your taste.

HUNKS. 'Tis my young cousin Griffin. He's heir to a great estate, you know. He discovered a surprizing genius almost as soon as he was born. When he was a very child, he made him a box, with one small hole in it, into which he could just crowd his money, and could not get it out again without breaking his box ; by which means he made a continual addition till he filled it, and——

BLITHE. Enough ! Enough ! I've a sufficient idea of his character, without hearing another word. But are you sure you shall obtain this excellent match for your daughter ?

HUNKS. Oh, I'm certain on't, I assure you, and my utmost wishes are gratified with the prospect. He has a large patrimony lying between two excellent farms of mine, which are at least worth two thousand pounds. These I've given to my daughter ; and have ordered her uncle to take the deeds into his own hands, and to deliver them to her on the day of her marriage.

BLITHE. Then it seems you've almost accomplished the

business. But have you got the consent of the young gentleman in the affair.

HUNKS. His consent! what need I care about his consent, so long as I've got his father's that's sufficient for my purpose!

BLITHE. Then you intend to force the young couple to marry, if they are unwilling?

HUNKS. Those two thousand pounds will soon give them a disposition, I'll warrant you.

BLITHE. Your schemes, I confess, are artfully concerted; but I must tell you, for your mortification, that the young gentleman is already married.

HUNKS. What do you say! already married! it can't be! I don't believe a syllable on't!

BLITHE. Every syllable is true! whether you believe it or not; I received a letter this day from his father; if you won't believe me, you may read it, [*gives him the letter.*] There's the account in the postscript. [*Points to it.*]

HUNKS reads. *I had almost forgot to tell you, that last Thursday my son was married to Miss Clary Brentford, and that all parties are very happy in the connection.* Confusion!—[*throws down the letter.*] What does this mean! married to Clary Brentford! this is exactly one of cousin Tom's villanous tricks. He promis'd me that his son should marry my daughter, upon condition that I would give her those two farms; but I can't imagine from what stupid motives he has alter'd his mind!

BLITHE. Disappointment is the common lot of all men! even our surest expectations are subject to misfortune.

HUNKS. Disappointment! this comes from a quarter from which I least expected one. But there's the deeds, I'll take care to secure them again; 'tis a good hit that I did not give them to the young rogue beforehand.

BLITHE. That was well thought of; you keep a good look out, I see, tho you can't avoid some disappointments. I see nothing in the way now, to hinder my son's proceeding; you will easily grant your consent, now you're cut off from your other expectations.

HUNKS. I can't see into this crooked affair—I'm heartily vex'd at it. What could induce that old villain, to deceive me in this manner? I fear this was some scheme of my daughter's, to prevent the effect of my design. If this

is her plan, if she sets so light by two thousand pounds, she shall soon know what 'tis to want it, I'll promise her.

BLITHE. If you had bestow'd your gift, without crossing her inclination, she would have accepted it very thankfully.

HUNKS. O, I don't doubt it in the least; that would have been a pretty story indeed! but since she insists upon gratifying a foolish fancy, she may follow her own inclination, and take the consequences of it; I'll keep the favors I meant to bestow on her, for those that know how to prize them, and that merit them by a becoming gratitude.

BLITHE. But you won't reject her, destitute of a patrimony, and a father's blessing?

HUNKS. Not one farthing shall she ever receive from my hand. Your son may take her, but her person is barely all that I'll give him; he has seduced her to disobey her father, and he shall feel the effects of it.

BLITHE. You're somewhat ruffled, I perceive, but I hope you'll recall these rash resolutions in your cooler moments.

HUNKS. No, never, I give you my word, and that's as fixed as the laws of the Medes and Persians.

BLITHE. But look ye, Sir, here's another circumstance to be attended to; my son has the deeds already in his own hands.

HUNKS. Deeds! what deeds! those I gave to my brother?

BLITHE. Yes, the very same.

HUNKS. What a composition of villany and witchcraft is here! What, my deeds given up to your son!

BLITHE. Yes: your brother thought that my son had an undoubted title to them now, since his cousin was married, and so he gave them up the next day.

HUNKS. This is intolerable! I could tear the scalp from my old brainless scull; why had not I more wit than to trust them with him? I'm cheated every way! I can't trust a farthing with the best friend I have on earth!

BLITHE. That's very true—'tis no wonder you can't trust your best friend. The truth of the case is, you have no friend, nor can you expect any, so long as you make an idol of yourself, and feast your sordid, avaricious appetite upon the misfortunes of mankind. You take every possible advantage; by the present calamities, to gratify your own selfish disposition. So long as this is the case, depend upon it,

you will be an object of universal detestation. There's no one on earth who would not rejoice to see how you're brought in. Your daughter has now got a good inheritance, and an agreeable partner, which you were in duty bound to grant her ; but, instead of that, you were then doing your utmost to deprive her of every enjoyment of life. [*Hunks puts his hands to his breast.*] I don't wonder your conscience smites you for your villainy. Don't you see how justly you have been cheated into your duty ?

HUNKS. I'll go this moment to an attorney, and get a warrant ; I'll put the villain in jail before an hour is at an end. Oh, my deeds ! my farms ! what shall I do for my farms !

BLITHE. Give yourself no farther trouble about them, there's no evidence in the case ; you must be sensible therefore, an action can't lie. I would advise you to rest contented, and learn from disappointments, not to place such an exorbitant value upon wealth. In the mean time I should be very glad of your company at the wedding. My son and his wife would be very happy to see you.

HUNKS. The dragon fly away with you, and your son, and your son's wife. O ! my farms ! what shall I do for my farms !



BEVIL and MYRTLE.

BEV. **S**IR, I am extremely obliged to you for this honor. MYRT. The time, the place, our long acquaintance, and many other circumstances, which affect me on this occasion, oblige me, without ceremony or conference, to desire, that you will comply with the request in my letter, of which you have already acknowledged the receipt.

BEV. Sir, I have received a letter from you in a very unusual stile. But as I am conscious of the integrity of my behavior with respect to you, and intend that every thing in this matter, shall be your own seeking, I shall understand nothing, but what you are pleased to confirm face to face, You are therefore to take it for granted, that I have forgot the contents of your epistle.

MYRT. Your cool behavior, Mr. Bevil, is agreeable to the unworthy use you have made of my simplicity and frankness to you. And I see, your moderation tends to your own

advantage, not mine ; to your own safety, not to justice for the wrongs you have done your friend.

BEV. My own safety ! Mr. Myrtle.

MYRT. Your own safety, Mr. Bevil.

BEV. Mr. Myrtle, there is no disguising any longer, that I understand what you would force me to. You know my principle upon that point ; and you have often heard me express my disapprobation of the savage manner of deciding quarrels, which tyrannical custom has introduced, to the breach of all laws, both divine and human.

MYRT. Mr. Bevil, Mr. Bevil ! It would be a good first principle in those who have so tender a conscience that way, to have as much abhorrence at doing injuries, as—*[Turns away abruptly.]*

BEV. As what ?

MYRT. As fear of answering them.

BEV. Mr. Myrtle, I have no fear of answering any injury I have done you ; because I have meant you none ; for the truth of which I am ready to appeal to any indifferent person, even of your own choosing. But I own I am afraid of doing a wicked action ; I mean of shedding your blood, or giving you an opportunity of shedding mine, cold. I am not afraid of you, Mr. Myrtle. But I own I am afraid of Him, who gave me this life in trust on other conditions and with other designs, than that I should hazard, or throw it away, because a rash inconsiderate man is pleased to be offended, without knowing whether he is injured or not. No, I will not for you or any man's humor, commit a known crime ; a crime which I cannot repair, or which may, in the very act, cut me off from all possibility of repentance.

MYRT. Mr. Bevil, I must tell you, this coolness, this moralizing, shall not cheat me of my love. You may wish to preserve your life, that you may possess Lucinda. And I have reason to be indifferent about it, if I am to lose all that from which I expect any joy in life. But I shall first try one means towards recovering her, I mean, by showing her what a dauntless hero she has chosen for her protector.

BEVIL. Shew me but the least glimpse of argument, that I am authorized to contend with you at the peril of the life of one of us, and I am ready upon your own terms. If this will not satisfy you, and you will make a lawless assault upon me, I will defend myself as against a Russian. There is no such terror, Mr. Myrtle, in the anger of those who are

quickly hot, and quickly cold again, they know not how or why. I defy you to show wherein I have wrong'd you.

MYRT. Mr. Bevil, it is easy for you to talk coolly on this occasion. You knew not, I suppose, what it is to love, and from your large fortune and your specious outward carriage, have it in your power to come, without any trouble or anxiety, to the possession of a woman of honor; you know nothing of what it is to be alarmed, distracted with the terror of losing what is dearer than life. You are happy; your marriage goes on like common business; and in the interim, you have, for your soft moments of dalliance, your rambling captive, your Indian princess, your convenient, your ready Indiana.

BEV. You have touched me beyond the patience of a man; and the defence of spotless innocence, will, I hope, excuse my accepting your challenge, or at least my obliging you to retract your infamous aspersions. I will not, if I can avoid it, shed your blood, nor shall you mine. But Indiana's purity I will defend. Who waits?

SERV. Did you call, Sir?

BEV. Yes, go call a coach.

SERV. Sir—Mr. Myrtle—gentlemen—you are friends—I am but a servant—but—

BEV. Call a coach.

[Exit Servant.]

[A long pause. They walk suddenly about the room.]

[Aside.] Shall I (tho provoked beyond sufferance) recover myself at the entrance of a third person, and that my servant too; and shall I not have a due respect for the dictates of my own conscience; for what I owe to the best of fathers and to the defenceless innocence of my lovely Indiana, whose very life depends on mine?

[To Mr. MYRTLE.] I have, thank heaven, had time to recollect myself, and have determined to convince you, by means I would willingly have avoided, but which yet are preferable to murderous duelling, that I am more innocent of nothing, than of rivaling you in the affections of Lucinda. Read this letter; and consider, what effect it would have had upon you to have found it about the man you had murdered.

[MYRT reads.] "I hope it is consistent with the laws a woman ought to impose upon herself, to acknowledge, that your manner of declining what has been proposed of a treaty of marriage in our family, and desiring, that the re-

fusal might come from me, is more engaging, than the Smithfield courtship of him, whose arms I am in danger of being thrown into, unless your friend exerts himself for our common safety and happiness."—O, I want no more, to clear your innocence, my injured worthy friend.—I see her dear name at the bottom.—I see that you have been far enough from designing any obstacle to my happiness, while I have been treating my benefactor as my betrayer—O Bevil, with what words shall I—

BEV. There is no need of words. To convince is more than to conquer. If you are but satisfied, that I meant you no wrong, all is as it should be.

MYRT. But can you—forgive—such madness?

BEV. Have not I myself offended? I had almost been as guilty as you, tho I had the advantage of you, by knowing what you did not know.

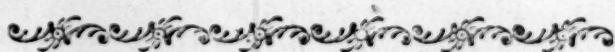
MYRT. That I should be such a precipitate wretch?

BEV. Prithee no more.

MYRT. How many friends have died by the hand of friends, merely for want of temper! what do I not owe to your superiority of understanding! what a precipice have I escaped! O my friend!—Can you ever—forgive—can you ever again look upon me—with an eye of favor?

BEV. Why should I not? any man may mistake. Any man may be violent, where his love is concerned. I was myself.

MYRT. O Bevil! you are capable of all that is great, all that is heroic.



QUINCE, SNUG, BOTTOM, FLUTE, SNOWT, and
STARVELING.

QUINCE. **I**S all our company here?

BOT. You had best call them conjunctly and severally, generally and specially, that is whereof to call them man by man according to the script.

QUIN. Here is the scroll of every man's name in this town that is fit to be seen upon the stage before the Duke and Datchess.

BOT. Good, Peter Quince, go to work in a method. Begin at the top, and go on to the bottom; that is whereof as a man may say, first tell us what the play treats of, then read the names of the actors, and so your business will stand

by itself as regular as a building set upon the very pinnacle of its foundation.

QUIN. Why then the play is the most delectable and lamentable comedy, entitled and called, the cruel tragedy of the death of Pyramus and Thisby!

BOT. A very moving play, I warrant it. A very deep tragedy, I know by the sound of the title of it. Pyramus and Thisby! I suppose they are to have their throats cut from ear to ear. Well, now, good Peter, call forth your actors by the scroll. Masters, spread yourselves out into a clump, every man conjunctly by himself.

QUIN. Answer, as I call you. Nick Bottom, weaver.

BOT. Ready. Name my part and proceed.

QUIN. You, Nick Bottom, are set down for Pyramus.

BOT. I am to play Pyramus. Well, and who is Pyramus? A gentleman or a simple man?

QUIN. Pyramus is a lover, and Thisby is his sweetheart. Pyramus kills himself for grief, because a lion got hold of Thisby's cloak, and tore it, which makes Pyramus conclude, as how he had tore her too, and eaten her up, all but the cloak; whereof he had not touched her. So that poor Pyramus looses his life, d'ye see, for nothing at all; whereof you know, that it is enough to make a man hang himself.

BOT. What then, am I to hang myself for vexation, because I had killed myself for nothing?

QUIN. No; that is not in the play.

BOT. Here will be salt tears wept, or I am mistaken. And I be the man, that acts this same Pyramus, let the ladies look to their eyes. I will condole and congratulate to some tune. I will break every heart that is not double hooped with flint. I have a main notion of acting your lover, that is crossed in love. There is but one thing that is more to my humor than your tribulation lover. That is your tyrant, your thundering tyrant. I could play you, for example, I could play you such a tyrant as Hircocles, when he gets on the brimstone shirt, and is all on fire, as the unlucky boys burns a great rat alive with spirits. And then, when he takes up little—what's his name—to squir him off the cliff into the sea. O then 'tis fine, "I'll split the raging rocks; and shivering shocks, with thundering knocks, shall break the locks of prison gates. And Febai's ear shall shine from far, and kindle war with many a scar, and make

and mar the stubborn fates." There is your right tragedy stuff. This is Herricole's vein to a hair. This is your only true tyrant's vein. Your lovyers vein is more upon the condoling and congratulating. Now, Peter Quince, name the rest of the players.

QUIN. Francis Flute, bellows mender.

FLUTE. Here, Peter Quince.

QUIN. Francis, you must take Thisby on you.

FLUTE. What, that is to be Nick Bottom's sweet heart, and to have my cloak worried alive by the great beast? Why, Peter, I have a beard a coming. I shan't make a clever woman, as you may say, unless it were Mrs. What d'ye call her, Mrs. Tibby's mother or aunt. Has not the gentlewoman of the play, a mother, or an aunt that appears?

QUIN. Yes; but you must do Thisby. You will do Thisby well enough, man. You shall do it in a mask. Robin Starveling, tailor.

STARV. Here, Peter Quince.

QUIN. You must play Pyramus's father; I will play Thisby's father; Flute must play Thisby; and Snowt Thisby's mother. Simon Snug, joiner.

SNUG. Here, Peter Quince.

QUIN. Simon, you must act the part of the lion.

SNUG! Heh! the part of the lion, do you say, Peter Quince? Why I never made a beast of myself in my life, but now and then, when I have drunk a cup too much.

QUIN. Pshaw, pshaw, a better man, than you or I either, has been made a beast before now; ay, and a horn'd beast too. But the lion is a royal beast, the king of beasts. So, Simon, you must play the part of the lion.

SNUG. Well, but an it be a long part, I can't remember it; for I have but a poor brain of my own. Let me see how many pages.

QUIN. Why Simon it is not written. And for the matter of that, you may do it off hand. It is nothing but roaring.

BOT. I'll tell you what, Peter Quince; you were better to let me act the part of the lion. Simon Snug is but a hen-hearted sort of a fellow. He wont roar you so loud as a mouse in the hole in the wall. But if you will let me play the part, I will make such a noise, as shall do any man's heart good to hear me. I will roar, that the duke shall cry, encore, encore, let him roar, let him roar, once more, once more.

QUIN. But if you were too terrible, you might frighten the dutcheſs and the ladies that they would ſhrick, and that were enough to hang us all.

BOT. Ay, if the dutcheſs and the ladies were frighted out of their wits, to be ſure, perhaps, they might have no more wit, than to get us all hang'd : but do you think, Peter Quince, that I have no more inhumanity in my nature, than to frighten people ? I would reſtrain and aggravate my voice that I would roar you as gentle as any ſucking dove : I would roar you as it were any nightengale.

QUIN. I tell you, Nick Bottom, hold your tongue, with your roaring, and ſet your heart at reſt. You ſhall play nothing but Pyramus.

BOT. Well, if I muſt, I muſt. What cannot be endur'd, you know, muſt be cur'd. But what beard were I beſt to play it in ?

QUIN. You muſt not have on a grey beard, you know ; becauſe it will not look natural for a man with a grey beard, to be acting the part of a lover.

BOT. Why, look you, Maſter Peter Quince, I don't think it ſo very unnatural to ſee people with grey beards acting the part of lovers ; at leaſt, I am ſure, it had not need be unnatural ; for it is common enough. But howſomever it will look a little unnatural as you ſay to ſee the young woman, Mrs. Tibby, fondling and looking ſweet upon a man with a grey beard. Wherefore, upon mixture liberation, I will play it in a beard black as jet.

QUIN. Here, then, Maſters, take your parts, and con them over with as much retention as you can ; that you may be ready to rehearſe by to-morrow night.

BOT. But where muſt we rehearſe, Peter Quince.

QUIN. Why, you know, if we ſhould go to rehearſe in a garret, or a malt-loft, we ſhould but draw a mob, and perhaps get ourſelves taken up for cromancers. Therefore we muſt go to the palace wood, and do it by moon light. Then you know, we ſhall do it with dacity and impoſure of mind, when there is no body to deplaud, or to hiſs.

BOT. Right, Peter Quince. We will be ready for you.

[*Exeunt.*]

P O E T R Y.

CONTEMPT of the common OBJECTS of PURSUIT.

HONOR and shame from no condition rise ;
 Aft well your part : There all the honor lies.
 Fortune in men has some small difference made ;
 One flaunts in rags ? one flatters in brocade ;
 The cobbler apron'd, and the parson gown'd ;
 The friar hooded, and the monarch crown'd ;
 " What differ more (you cry) than crown and cowl ?"
 I'll tell you, friend ! A wise man and a fool.
 You'll find, if once the wise man acts the monk,
 Or, cobbler-like, the parson will be drunk ;
 Worth makes the man, and want of it the fellow ;
 The rest is all but leather or prunella.

Stuck o'er with titles, and hung round with strings,
 That thou may'st be by kings, or ~~wives~~ of kings,
 Boast the pure blood of an illustrious race,
 In quiet flow from Lucrece or Lucrece :
 But by your father's worth, if yours you rate,
 Count me these only, who were good and great.

Go ! if your ancient, but ignoble blood,
 Has crept through scoundrels ever since the flood :
 Go ! and pretend your family is young ;
 Nor own your fathers have been fools so long.
 What can ennoble fots, or slaves, or cowards ;
 Alas ! not all the blood of all the Howards.

Look next on greatness. Say, where greatness lies ?
 Where, but among the heroes and the wise.
 Heroes are all the same it is agreed,
 From Macedonia's madman to the Swede.
 The whole strange purpose of their lives to find,
 Or make—an enemy of all mankind.
 Not one looks backward : onward still he goes ;
 Yet ne'er looks forward farther than his nose.
 No less alike the politic and wise ;
 All fly, slow things, with circumspective eyes :
 Men in their loose, unguarded hours they take ;
 Not that themselves are wise ; but others weak.

But grant that those can conquer ; these can cheat ;
 'Tis phrase absurd to call a villain great.
 Who wickedly is wise, or madly brave,
 Is but the more a fool, the more a knave.
 Who noble ends by noble means obtains,
 Or, falling, smiles in exile, or in chains,
 Like good Aurelius let him reign ; or bleed
 Like Socrates ; that man is great indeed.
 What's fame ? a fancy'd life in others' breath ;
 A thing beyond us ev'n before our death.
 Just what you hear's your own ; and what's unknown,
 The same (my lord !) if Tully's or your own.
 All that we feel of it, begins and ends
 In the same circle of our foes or friends ;
 To all besides as much an empty shade,
 An Eugene living, as a Cæsar dead ;
 Alike or when, or where they shone, or shine,
 Or on the Rubicon, or on the Rhine.
 A wit's a feather, and a chief's a rod ;
 An honest man's the noblest work of God.
 Fame, but from death a villain's name can save,
 As justice tears his body from the grave ;
 When what 't' oblivion better were resign'd,
 Is hung on high, to poison half mankind.
 All fame is foreign, but of true desert ;
 Plays round the head ; but comes not to the heart.
 One self-approving hour whole years outweighs
 Of stupid flatters, and of loud huzzas ;
 And more true joy Marcellus exil'd feels,
 Than Cæsar with a senate at his heels.

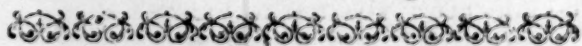
In parts superior what advantage lies ?
 Tell (for you can) what is it to be wise ?
 'Tis but to know, how little can be known ;
 To see all others' faults and feel our own :
 Condemn'd in business, or in arts to drudge ;
 Without a second, and without a judge.
 Truths would you teach, to save a sinking land,
 All fear ; none aid you ; and few understand.
 Painful pre-eminence ! yourself to view
 Above life's weakness, and its comforts too.

Bring then these blessings to a strict account ;
 Make fair deductions : see to what they 'mount.

How much of other each is sure to cost ;
 How each for other oft is wholly lost ;
 How inconsistent greater goods with these
 How sometimes life is risk'd and always ease ;
 Think ; and if still such things thy envy call,
 Say, would'st thou be the man to whom they fall ?
 To fight for ribbands if thou art so silly,
 Mark how they grace Lord Umbra, or Sir Billy.
 Is yellow dirt the passion of thy life ?
 Look but on Gripus or on Gripus' wife.
 If parts allure thee, think how Bacon shin'd,
 The wisest, brightest—meanest of mankind :
 Or, ravish'd with the whistling of a name,
 See Cromwell damn'd to everlasting fame :
 If all united thy ambition call,
 From ancient story learn to scorn them all.

VARIOUS CHARACTERS.

TIS from high life, high characters are drawn :
 A saint in crape is twice a saint in lawn ;
 A judge is just ; a chanc'lor—juster still
 A gownman, learn'd ; a bishop—what you will ;
 Wise, if a minister ; but if a king,
 More wise, more just, more learn'd, more every thing.—
 'Tis ducation forms the common mind ;
 Just eas the twig is bent, the tree's inclin'd.
 Boastful and rough, your first son is a 'squire ;
 The next a tradesman, meek, and much a liar ;
 Tom struts a soldier, open, bold and brave ;
 Will sneaks a scriv'ner, an exceeding knave ;
 Is he a churchman ? Then he's fond of pow'r ;
 A Quaker ? Sly. A Presbyterian ? Sour ;
 A smart free thinker ? All things in an hour.—
 Manners with fortunes, humors turn with climes,
 Tenets with books, and principles with times.
 Search then the ruling passion. There alone
 The wild are constant, and the cunning known.



The WORLD compared to a STAGE.

ALL the world's a stage ;
 And all the men and women, merely players.

They have their exits and their entrances ;
 And one man, in his time, plays many parts,
 His acts being seven ages.—At first, the infant ;
 Mewling and puking in the nurse's arms.—
 And then, the whining school-boy, with his satchel
 And shining morning face, creeping, like snail,
 Unwillingly to school.—And then, the lover,
 Sighing like furnace, with a woful ballad
 Made to his mistress' eye-brow.—Then, a soldier,
 Full of strange oaths, and bearded like the pard ;
 Jealous in honor ; sudden and quick in quarrel ;
 Seeking the bubble, reputation,
 Even in the cannon's mouth.—And then, the justice ;
 In fair round body, with good capon lin'd ;
 With eyes severe, and beard of formal cut ;
 Full of wise laws and modern instances :
 And so he plays his part.—The sixth age shifts
 Into the lean and slipper'd pantaloon ;
 With spectacles on nose, and pouch on side ;
 His youthful hose well sav'd, a world too wide
 For his shrunk shank ; and his big manly voice,
 Turning again towards childish treble, pipes
 And whistles in his sound.—Last scene of all,
 That ends this strange eventful history,
 Is second childishness, and mere oblivion ;
 Sans teeth, sans eyes, sans taste, sans every thing.



COLUMBUS to FERDINAND.

COLUMBUS *was a considerable number of years engaged in soliciting the court of Spain to fit him out, in order to discover a new continent, which he imagined existed some where in the western parts of the ocean. During his negotiations, he is supposed to address king FERDINAND in the following stanzas :*

ILLUSTRIOUS monarch of Iberia's soil,
 Too long I wait permission to depart ;
 Sick of delays, I beg thy list'ning ear—
 Shine forth the patron and the prince of art.
 While yet Columbus breathes the vital air,
 Grant his request to pass the western main ;
 Reserve this glory for thy native soil,

And what must please thee more—for thy own reign.
 Of this huge globe, how small a part we know—
 Does heav'n their worlds to western suns deny?
 How disproportion'd to the mighty deep
 The lands that yet in human prospect lie!
 Does Cynthia, when to western skies arriv'd,
 Spend her sweet beam upon the barren main,
 And ne'er illumine with midnight splendor, she,
 The native dancing on the lightsome green?
 Should the vast circuit of the world contain
 Such wastes of ocean, and such scanty land?
 'Tis reason's voice that bids me think not so;
 I think more nobly of th' Almighty hand.
 Does yon fair lamp trace half the circle round
 To light the waves and monsters of the seas?
 No—be there naught beyond the billowy waste
 Islands, and men, and animals, and trees.
 An unremitting flame my breast inspires
 To seek new lands amidst the barren waves,
 Where falling low the source of day descends,
 And the blue sea his evening visage laves.
 Here in his tragic lay, Cordova's sage;*
 "The time shall come when numerous years are past,
 The ocean shall dissolve the bands of things,
 And an extended region rise at last;
 And Typhis shall disclose the mighty land,
 Far, far away, where none have rov'd before;
 Nor shall the world's remotest regions be
 Gibraltar's rock, or Thule's savage shore."
 Fir'd at the theme, I languish to depart,
 Supply the barque, and bid Columbus sail,
 He fears no storms upon the untravell'd deep;
 Reason shall steer, and skill disarm the gale,
 Nor does he dread to lose the intended course,
 Tho' far from land the reeling galley stray,
 And skies above, and gulfy seas below
 Be the sole object seen for many a day.
 Think not that nature has unveil'd in vain
 The mystic magnet to the mortal eye,
 So late have we the guiding needle plann'd
 Only to sail beneath our native sky;
 Ere this was found the ruling power of all

* Seneca the poet, native of Cordova, in Spain.

Found for our use an ocean in the land,
 Its breadth so small we could not wander long,
 Nor long be absent from the neighboring strand,
 Short was the course, and guided by the stars,
 But stars no more shall point our daring way ;
 The Bear shall sink, and every guard be drown'd,
 And great Arcturus scarce escape the sea.
 When southward we shall steer—O grant ray wish,
 Supply the barque, and bid Columbus fail,
 He dreads no tempest on the untravell'd deep,
 Reason shall steer, and skill disarm the gale.



DESCRIPTION of a STORM of HAIL.

LONG rush'd the victors o'er the sanguine field,
 And scarce were Gibeon's loftiest spires beheld,
 When up the west dark clouds began to rise,
 Sail'd o'er the hills, and lengthen'd round the skies ;
 A ridge of folding fire, their summits shone,
 But fearful blackness all beneath was thrown ;
 Swift round the sun the spreading gloom was hurl'd,
 And night, and solitude, amaz'd the world.

At once the voice of deep resounding gales
 Rung flow and solemn in the distant vales :
 Then thro' the groves, and o'er the extended plain,
 With stormy rage the rapid whirlwinds ran.
 Red o'er the glimmering hills, with pomp divine,
 The lightning's flaming path began to shine :
 Far round the immense, unusual thunders driven,
 Proclaim'd the onset of approaching heaven :
 Astonish'd nature own'd the strange alarm,
 And the world trembled at the impending storm.
 O'er the dark fields aghast Canaan stream'd ;
 Thick in their course the scatter'd bucklers gleam'd :
 Behind them Joshua urg'd the furious car,
 And tenfold horrors hover'd round the war.

But when the Chief the spreading storm survey'd,
 And trac'd Almighty arms in heaven display'd ;
 With piercing voice he gave the great command ;
 Stand still, ye chosen sons, admiring stand !
 Behold what awful scenes in heaven arise !
 Adore the power, that brightens in the skies !

Now God's tremendous arm asserts his laws ;
 Now bids his thunder aid the righteous cause ;
 Shows man how virtue saves her chosen bands,
 And points the vengeance doom'd for guilty lands ;
 Behold, what flames shoot forth ! what gloom ascends !
 How nature trembles ! how the concave rends !
 How the clouds darken ! see in yonder sky,
 'Their opening skirts proclaim the Almighty nigh !
 He spoke, and from the north a rushing sound
 Roll'd thro the heavens, and shook th'embattled ground.

 Bron'd on a dark-red cloud, an angel's form
 Sail'd awfully sublime, above the storm.
 Half veil'd in mist, his countenance, like a sun,
 Illum'd the clouds, and thro all ether shone :
 Long robes of crimson light behind him flow'd !
 His wings were flames ; his locks were dy'd in blood ;
 Ten thousand fiery shapes were round him driven,
 And all the dazzling pomp of opening heaven.

Now, save Canaan's cries that feebly rung
 Round the dark plain, a fearful silence hung ;
 Stretch'd in dire terror o'er the quivering band,
 The etherial Vision wav'd his sun-bright hand ;
 At once, from opening skies, red flames were hurl'd,
 And thunders, roll'd on thunders, rock'd the world ;
 In one broad deluge sunk the avenging hail,
 And, fill'd with tempest, roar'd the hoary vale ;
 Fierce raging whirlwinds boundless nature blend ;
 The streams rush back ; the tottering mountains bend ;
 Down the tall steep their bursting summits roll ;
 And cliffs, on cliffs, hoarse-crashing, rend the pole.
 Far round the earth, a wild, drear horror reigns ;
 The high heavens heave, and roar the gloomy plains ;
 One sea of lightning all the region fills,
 And waves of fire ride surging o'er the hills :
 The nodding forests plunge in flame around,
 And with huge caverns gapes the shuddering ground,
 Swifter than rapid winds Canaan driven,
 Refuse the conflict of embattled Heaven.
 But the dire hail in vain the victims fly,
 And death unbounded shook from all the sky,
 The thunder's dark career, the seraph's arm,
 Pierce vengeance blazing down the immense of storm,
 From falling groves to burning flames they flew ;

Hail roars around, and angry hosts pursue ;
 From shaking skies Almighty arms are hurl'd,
 And all the gloomy concave bursts upon the world.



ADDRESS to the DEITY.

FATHER of light ! exhaustless source of good !
 Supreme, eternal, self-existent God !
 Before the beamy sun dispens'd a ray,
 Flam'd in the azure vault, and gave the day,
 Before the glimmering moon with borrow'd light
 Shone queen amid the silver host of night,
 High in the heavens, thou reign'd superior Lord,
 By suppliant angels worship'd and ador'd.
 With the celestial choir then let me join
 In cheerful praises to the Power Divine.
 To sing thy praise, do thou, O God ! inspire
 A mortal breast with more than mortal fire.
 In dreadful majesty thou sit'st enthron'd,
 With light encircled, and with glory crown'd ;
 Thro all infinitude extends thy reign,
 For thee nor heaven, nor heaven of heavens contain ;
 But tho thy throne is fix'd above the sky,
 Thy omnipresence fills immensity.
 Saints rob'd in white, to thee their anthems bring,
 And radiant martyrs hallelujahs sing :
 Heav'n's universal host their voices raise
 In one eternal concert to thy praise ;
 And round thy awful throne with one accord,
 Sing holy, holy, holy is the Lord.
 At thy creative voice from ancient night,
 Sprang smiling beauty, and yon worlds of light ;
 Thou spak'st—the planetary Chorus roll'd,
 Stupendous worlds ! unmeasur'd and untold !
 Let there be light, said God—light instant shone,
 And from the orient burst the golden sun ;
 Heav'n's gazing hierarchies, with glad surprise,
 Saw the first morn invest the recent skies,
 And strait the exulting troops thy throne surround
 With thousand, thousand harps of rapt'rous sound ;
 Thrones, powers, dominions (ever fainting trains ;)
 Shouted thy praises in triumphant strains :

Great are thy works, they sing ; and all around
 Great are thy works, the echoing heav'ns resound.
 Th' effulgent sun, unsufferably bright,
 Is but a ray of thy o'erflowing light ;
 'The tempest is thy breath ; the thunder hurl'd
 Tremendous, roars thy vengeance o'er the world ;
 Thou bow'st the heav'ns, the smoaking mountains nod,
 Rocks fall to dust, and nature owns her God ;
 Pale tyrants shrink, the atheist stands aghast,
 And impious kings in horror breathe their last.
 To this great God, alternately, I'd pay
 The evening anthem, and the morning lay.



A MORNING HYMN.

FROM night, from silence, and from death,
 Or death's own form, mysterious sleep,
 I wake to life, to light and health :
 Thus me doth Israel's watchmen keep.
 Sacred to Him, in grateful praise,
 Be this devoted tranquil hour,
 While him, supremely good and great,
 With rapt'rous homage I adore.
 What music breaks from yonder copse ?
 'The plummy songster's artless lay ;
 Melodious songsters, nature taught !
 That warbling hail the dawning day.
 Shall man be mute, while instinct sings ?
 Nor human breast with transport rise ?
 O for an universal hymn,
 To join the chorus of the skies !
 See yon refulgent lamp of day,
 With unabating glory crown'd,
 Shining in his giant strength,
 To run his daily destin'd round.
 So may I still perform thy will ;
 Great Sun of Nature and of Grace !
 Nor wander devious from thy law ;
 Nor faint in my appointed race.
 What charms display th' unfolding flowers ?
 How gaudious glows the enamell'd mead ?
 More gaudious still the heaven-wrought robe,

Of purest white, and fac'd with red.
 The sun exhales the pearly dew,
 Those brilliant sky-shed tears that mourn
 His nightly loss; till from earth's cheek
 They're kiss'd away by pitying morn.
 For laps'd mankind what friendly tears
 Bent on our weal did angels shed?
 Bound, bound our hearts, to think those tears
 Made frustrate all when Jesus bled?
 Arabia wafts from yonder grove
 Delicious odours in the gale;
 And with her breeze-born fragrance greets,
 Each circumjacent hill and dale.
 As incense may my morning song,
 A sweetly smelling favor rise,
 Perfum'd with Gilead's precious balm,
 To make it grateful to the skies.
 And when from death's long sleep I wake,
 To nature's renovating day,
 Clothe me with thy own righteousness,
 And in thy likeness, Lord, array.



HYMN TO PEACE.

HAIL, sacred Peace, who claim'st thy bright abode
 Mid circling saints that grace the throne of God,
 Before his arm, around this shapeless earth,
 Stretch'd the wide heav'ns, and gave to nature birth;
 Ere morning stars, his glowing chambers hung,
 Or songs of gladness woke an Angel's tongue,
 Veil'd in the brightness of the Almighty's mind,
 In blest repose thy placid form reclin'd;
 Borne through the heaven, with his creating voice,
 Thy presence bade the unfolding worlds rejoice,
 Gave to seraphic harps their sounding lays,
 Their joy to angels, and to men their praise,
 From scenes of blood these beauteous shores that stain,
 From gasping friends that press the sanguin'd plain,
 From fields, long taught in vain thy flight to mourn,
 I rise, delightful power, and greet thy glad return.
 Too long the groans of death and battle's bray
 Have rung discordant thro' th' unpleasing lay;

Let pity's tear its balmy fragrance shed,
 O'er heroes wounds and patriot warriors dead;
 Accept, departed shades, these grateful sighs,
 Your fond attendants to th' approving skies.
 But now the untuneful trump shall grate no more,
 Ye silver streams, no longer swell with gore;
 Bear from your beauteous banks the crimson stain,
 With yon-retiring navies to the main;
 While other views unfolding on my eyes,
 And happier themes bid bolder numbers rise.
 Bring bounteous peace, in thy celestial throng,
 Life to my soul, and rapture to my song;
 Give me to trace, with pure unclouded ray,
 The arts and virtues that attend thy sway;
 To see thy blissful charms that here descend,
 Thro distant realms and endless years extend.

ADDITIONAL DIALOGUES.

Scene between CECILIA BEVERLY *and* HENRIETTA BELFIELD.

CECILIA. **M**Y dear Henrietta, you seem to be overjoyed. May I know the cause?

HENRIETTA. My dear, dear, Miss Beverly, I have such a thing to tell you—you would never guess it—I do not know how to believe it myself—Mr Delvill has written to me! he has indeed! here is the note! [*holding out a letter.*]

CEC. Indeed! I long to know the contents. Pray read it

HEN. [*reads it.*]

“To Miss BELFIELD.

Mr. Delvill presents his compliments to Miss Belfield, and begs to be permitted to wait on her for a few minutes, at any time in the afternoon she will please to appoint.”

Only think! it is *me*, poor simple *me*, of all people, that he wants to speak with. But what can he want? My dearest Cecilia, tell me what you think he can have to say to me?

CEC. Indeed, it is impossible for me to conjecture.

HEN. If *you* can't, I am sure there is no wonder *I* can't.

I have thought of a million things in a minute. It can't be about business—It can't be about my brother—It can't be about my dear Miss Beverly—I suspect—[*A servant enters with a message.*]

SER. A gentleman in the parlor desires to speak with Miss Belfield. [*Servant goes out.*]

HEN. My dear Miss Beverly, what shall I say to him. Pray advise me. I am so confused I can't say a single word.

CEC. I can't advise you, Miss Belfield, for I don't know what *he* will say to *you*.

HEN. But I can guess, I can guess! And I shan't know what in the world to answer. I shall behave like a simpleton and disgrace myself.

[*Cecilia leaves her and Mr. Delvill enters the room*]

DELVILL. Good morrow, Miss Belfield. I hope I have the pleasure to see you well to day. Is Miss Beverly at home? I have a message for her from my mother.

HEN. [With a look of disappointment] yes, sir, she is at home. I will call her. [*goes out.*]

[*Cecilia enters.*]

DELV. Good morrow, Madam. I have presumed to wait on you, this morning, by permission of my mother. But I am afraid that permission is so late, that the influence I hoped from it is past.

CEC. I had no means, Sir, of knowing you came from her. Otherwise I should have received her commands without hesitation.

DELV. I would thank you for the honor you do her, was it less pointedly exclusive. Yet I have no right to reproach you. Let me ask, Madam, could you, after my solemn promise at our last parting, to renounce all future claim upon you, in obedience to my mother's will, could you think me so dishonorable, as to obtrude myself into your presence, while that promise was in force?

CEC. I find I have been too hasty. I did indeed believe Mrs. Delvill would never authorize such a visit; but as I was much surprized, I hope I may be pardoned for a little doubt.

DELV. There spoke Miss Beverly! the same, the unaltered Miss Beverly I hoped to find. Yet *is* she unaltered? Am I not too hasty? And is the story I have heard about Belfield a dream? an error? a falsehood?

CEC. If it was not that such a quick succession of quar-

rels would be endless perplexity, I would be affronted that you can ask me such a question.

DELV. Had I thought it a question, I should not have asked it. But never for a moment did I credit it, till the rigor of your repulse alarmed me. But as you are good enough to account for that, I am encouraged to make known the design of my present visit. Yet with confidence I *cannot* speak; *hardly* with hope.

CEC. One thing, Sir, let me say before you proceed; if your *purpose* has not the sanction of Mrs Delvill, as well as your visit, I would be excused from hearing it, for I shall most certainly refuse it.

DELV. I would mention nothing without her concurrence, she has given it; and my father has also consented to my present application.

CEC. (clasping her hands in joy) Is it possible?

DELV. *Is it possible?* With what emotions do I hear these words? ah, Miss Beverly! once my own Cecilia! do you, can you *wish* it possible?

CEC. No, no, I wish nothing about it. Yet tell me how it has happened—I am curious (smiling) though not interested in it.

DELV. What hope would this sweetness give me, was my scheme any other than it is! But you cannot—no, it would be unreasonable—it would be madness to expect your compliance! It is next to madness in me to wish it! But how shall a man who is desperate, be prudent and circumspect?

CEC. Spare yourself, Sir, this unnecessary pain. You will find in me no unnecessary scruples.

DELV. You know not what you say, Madam. All noble as you are, the sacrifice I have to propose.

CEC. Name it, Sir, with confidence. I will not disguise—but frankly own that I will agree to any sacrifice you will mention, provided it has Mrs. Delvill's approbation.

DELV. What words are these? Is it Miss Beverly that speaks?

CEC. What can I say more? Must I offer this pledge too? (holding out her hand)

DELV. My dear Cecilia, how happy this makes me! (taking her hand) for my life I would not resign it. Yet how soon will you withdraw it, when you know that the only terms on which I can hold it, are that this hand must sign away your inheritance.

CEC. I do not comprehend this, Sir.

DELV. Can you, for my sake, make such a sacrifice as this? I am not permitted to give up *my* name for *yours*; can you renounce your uncle's *fortune*, as you must, if you renounce your *name*; and consent to such settlements as *I* can make upon you? Will these and your own paternal inheritance of ten thousand pounds, satisfy your expectations of living?

CEC. (*Turning pale and drawing back her hand*) O, Mr. Delvill, your words pierce me to the soul.

DELV. Have I offended you, madam? Pardon me then for indulging a romantic whim which your better judgment disapproves. My presumption deserves this mortification.

CEC. You know not then my inability to comply.

DELV. Your ability or inability, I presume, depends on your own will.

CEC. No, Sir, by no means, My *power* is lost—My fortune, alas, is gone.

DELV. *Impossible!* utterly impossible!

CEC. Would to heaven it was otherways! But it is too true; and your father knows it.

DELV. My father!

CEC. Did he never hint it to you?

DELV. Distraction! what horrible confirmation is coming! (*pausing*) you only, Miss Beverly could have made this credible!

CEC. Had you then actually heard it?

DELV. I had indeed heard it, as the most infamous falsehood. My heart swelled with indignation at such slander.

CEC. Oh, Sir, the fact is undeniable; tho the circumstances you may have heard with it may be exaggerated.

DELV. That indeed must have been the case. I was told that your parental fortune was totally exhausted, and that during your minority, you had been a dealer with Jews! all this I was told from my father, or I could not have been made to hear it.

CEC. Thus far he told you nothing but truth.

DELV. Truth! (*starting*) never then was truth so scandalously wronged! I denied the whole report! I disbelieved every syllable! I pledged my own honor to prove every assertion false.

CEC. Generous Delvill, this is what I might expect from you (*weeping.*)

DELV. Why does Miss Beverly weep? Why has she given me this alarm? These things must at least have been misrepresented. Will you condescend to unravel to me this mysterious affair.

CEC. Alas, Sir, the unfortunate Mr. Harrel! He has been the cause of my losses. You know his love of gaming, a passion which led him to his fatal end. In his embarrassments he came to me for assistance. He was my guardian; what could I do? I yielded to his entreaties, and repeatedly took up money of a Jew, upon the credit of my estate, until the whole was pledged. If it was a fault, I know you will ascribe it to the real motive and pardon it.

DELV. My dear Cecilia, I thank you sincerely for this account of your misfortunes; altho it fills my heart with anguish. How will my mother be shocked to hear a confirmation of the report she had heard! How irritated at your injuries from Harrel! How grieved that your generosity should bring upon your character so many vile aspersions.

CEC. I have been of too easy a disposition—too unguarded—yet always, at the moment, I seemed guided by common humanity. But I thought myself secure of wealth; and while the revenue of my uncle ensured me prosperity, I thought little of my own fortune. Could I have foreseen this moment—

DELV. Would you then have listened to my romantic proposal?

CEC. Could I have hesitated?

DELV. Most generous of beings, still then be mine! By our economy, we will make savings to pay off our mortgages and clear our estates. I will still keep my name to which my family is bigotted, and my gratitude for your compliance shall make you forget what *you* lose by the change of *yours*.



Scene between CECILIA BEVERLY and a GENTLEMAN.

GENTLEMAN. I Presume, Madam, you are the lady of this house. May I take the liberty to ask your name?

CEC. My name, Sir.

GENT. You will do me a favor by telling it me.

CEC. Is it possible, Sir, you are come hither, without already knowing it?

GENT. I know it only by common report, Madam.

CEC. Common report, Sir, I believe is seldom wrong in a matter where it is so easy to be right.

GENT. Have you any objection, madam, to telling me your name.

CEC. No, Sir, but your business can hardly be very important, if you are yet to learn whom you are to address. It will be time enough, therefore, for us to meet, when you have elsewhere learnt my name. *(going)*

GENT. I beg, madam, you will have patience ; it is necessary before I can open my business that I should hear your name from yourself.

CEC. Why, Sir, I think you can scarcely have come to this house, without knowing that its owner is Cecilia Beverly.

GENT. That, Madam, is your maiden name.

CEC. My maiden name ! *(surprized.)*

GENT. Are you not married, Madam ?

CEC. Married, Sir !

GENT. It is more properly, Madam, the name of your husband, that I mean to ask.

CEC. And by what authority, Sir, do you make these extraordinary enquiries ?

GENT. I am deputed, Madam, by Mr. Eggleston who is next heir to your uncle's estate, if you die without children, or change your name when you marry. I am authorized by letter of attorney from him to make these enquiries, and I presume, Madam, you will not deny his authority. He has been credibly informed, you are married ; and as you continue to be called Miss Beverly, he wishes to know your intentions, as he is deeply interested in knowing the truth.

CEC. This demand, Sir, is so extremely—*(flammering)* so—so little expected—

GENT. The better way, Madam, in these cases, is to keep close to the point. Are you married, or are you not ?

CEC. This is dealing very plainly, indeed, Sir. But—

GENT. It is, Madam ; and very seriously too ; but it is a business of no slight concern. Mr. Eggleston has a large family and a small fortune, and that, very much encumbered. It cannot therefore be expected that he will see himself wronged by your enjoying an estate to which he is entitled.

CEC. Mr. Eggleston, Sir, has nothing to fear from im-

position. Those with whom he has or may have any transactions in this affair, are not used to practice fraud.

GENT. I am far from meaning any offence, Madam; my commission from Mr. Eggleston is simply this; to beg you will satisfy him upon what ground you now evade the will of your late uncle; which, till explained, appears to be a point much to his prejudice.

CRC. Tell him then, Sir, that whatever he wishes to know, shall be explained in about a week. At present I can give no other answer.

GENT. Very well, Madam, he will wait till that time, I am sure; for he does not wish to put you to any inconvenience. But when he heard the Gentleman was gone abroad without owning his marriage, he thought it high time to take some notice of the matter.

CRC. Pray, Sir, let me ask, how *you* came to any knowledge of this affair?

GENT. I heard it, Madam, from Mr. Eggleston himself, who has long known it.

CRC. Long, Sir?—impossible!—it is not yet a fortnight—not ten days, or not more, that—

GENT. That, Madam, may perhaps be disputed; for when this business comes to be settled, it will be very essential to be exact as to the time, even to the very hour; for the income of the estate is large, madam; and if your husband keeps his own name, you must not only give up your uncle's inheritance, from the time of changing your name; but refund the profits from the very day of your marriage.

CRC. There is not the least doubt of that, nor will the least difficulty be made.

GENT. Please then to recollect, Madam, that the sum to be refunded is every hour increasing, and has been ever since last September, which made half a year to be accounted for last March. Since then there is now added—

CRC. For mercy's sake, Sir, what calculations are you making out? Do you call last week, last September?

GENT. No, Madam; but I call last September the month in which you were married.

CRC. You will then find yourself extremely mistaken; and Mr. Eggleston is preparing himself for much disappointment, if he supposes me so long in arrears with him.

GENT. Mr. Eggleston, Madam, happens to be well informed of this transaction, as you will find, if any

should arise in the case. He was the next occupier of the house you hired last September ; the woman who kept it, informed him that the last person who hired it was a lady who stayed one day only, and came to town, she found, merely to be married. On enquiry he discovered that this lady was Miss Beverly.

CEC. You will find all this, Sir, end in nothing.

GENT. That, Madam, remains to be proved. If a young lady is seen—and *she was* seen, going into church at eight o'clock in the morning, with a young gentleman and one female friend ; and is afterwards seen coming out of it, followed by a clergyman and one other person—and is seen to get into a coach with the same young gentleman and same female friend, why the circumstances are pretty strong !

CEC. They may seem so, Sir ; but all conclusions drawn from them will be erroneous : I was not married then, upon my honor.

GENT. We have little to do, Madam, with professions ; the circumstances are strong enough to bear a trial—and—

CEC. A trial !—

GENT. We have found many witnesses to prove a number of particulars, and eight months share of such an estate as this, is well worth a little trouble.

CEC. I am amazed, Sir ; surely Mr. Eggleston never authorized you to make use of this language to me.

GENT. Mr. Eggleston, Madam, has behaved very honorably ; tho he knew the whole affair, he supposed Mr. Delvill had good reasons for a short concealment, and expected every day when the matter would become public. He therefore did not interfere. But on hearing that Mr. Delvill had set out for the continent, he was advised to claim his rights.

CEC. His claims, Sir, will doubtless be satisfied without threatening or law-suits.

GENT. The truth is, Madam, Mr. Eggleston is a little embarrassed for want of some money. This makes it a point with him, to have the affair settled speedily, unless you choose to compromise, by advancing a particular sum, till it suits you to refund the whole that is due to him and quit the premises.

CEC. Nothing, Sir, is due to him ; at least nothing worth mentioning. I will enter into no terms : I have

no compromise to make. As to the premises, I will quit them as soon as possible.

GENT. You will do well, madam, for the truth is, it will not be convenient for him to wait any longer. *(he goes out)*

CEC. How weak and blind have I been, to form a secret plan of defrauding the heir to my uncles estate. I am betrayed—and I deserve it. Never, never more will I disgrace myself by such an act.

~~~~~

*Scene between CECILIA and HENRIETTA.*

CECILIA. **W**HAT is the matter with my dear Henrietta? Who is it that has already afflicted that kind heart, which I am now compelled to afflict for myself?

HEN. No, Madam, not afflicted for *you*! it would be strange, if I was, while I think as I now do.

CEC. I am glad you are not, for, was it possible I would give you nothing but pleasure and joy.

HEN. Ah, Madam, why will you say so, when you do not care what becomes of me! When you are going to cast me off!—and when you will soon be too happy to think of me more!

CEC. If I am never happy till then, sad indeed will be my life! no, my gentlest friend, you will always have your share in my heart; and to me would always have been the welcomest guest in my house, but for those unhappy circumstances which make our separating inevitable.

HEN. Yet you suffered me, Madam, to hear from any body that you was married and going away; and all the common servants in the house knew it before me.

CEC. I am amazed! How and which way can they have heard it?

HEN. The man that went to Mr. Eggleston brought the first news of it, for he said all the servants there talked of nothing else, and that their master was to come and take possession here next Thursday.

CEC. Yet you envy me, tho I am forced to leave my house! tho I am not provided with any other! and tho he for whom I relinquish it is far off, without the means of protecting me, or the power of returning home.

HEN. But you are married to him, Madam!

CEC. True, my love, but I am also parted from him.





For I see, for a Doctor, you really have a very pretty notion of a compliment. Only you have one great fault still ; you look the whole time as if you said it for a joke.

DR. LYS. Why in fact Madam, when a man has been a plain dealer both in word and look for fifty years, 'tis expecting too quick a reformation to demand ductility of voice and eye from him at a blow. However give me a little time and a little encouragement, and with such a tutorefs, 'twill be hard, if I do not, in a few lessons, learn the right method of seasoning a simper, and the newest fashion of twisting words from their meaning.

LADY HON. But pray, Sir, always remember on these occasions to look serious. Nothing sets off a compliment so much as a long face. If you are tempted to an unseasonable laugh, think of Delvill Castle ; 'tis an expedient I commonly make use of myself, when I am afraid of being too frolicksome ; and it always succeeds, for the very thought of it gives me the head-ach in a moment. I wonder, Mr. Delvill, you keep your health so good ; after living in that horrible place so long. I have expected to hear of your death at the end of every summer, and I assure you, I was once very near buying mourning.

DEL. The estate which descends to a man from his ancestors, Lady Honoria, will seldom be apt to injure his health, if he is conscious of committing no misdemeanor which has degraded their memory.

LADY HON. [*in a low voice to Cecilia*] How vastly odious is this new father of yours. What could ever induce you to give up your charming estate for the sake of coming into his stuffy old family ? I would really advise you to have your marriage annulled. You know, you have only to take an oath that you were forcibly run away with ; and as you are an heiress and the Delvill's are all so violent, it will easily be believed. And then, as soon as you are at liberty, I would advise you to marry my little lord Derford.

CEC. Would you only then have me regain my freedom in order to part with it ?

LADY HON. Certainly, for you can do nothing at all without being married. A single woman is a thousand times more shackled than a wife ; for she is accountable to every body : and a wife you know has nothing to do but just to manage her husband.

CEC. [*smiling*] And that you consider as a trifle !

LADY HON. Yes, if you do but marry a man you don't care for.

CEC. You are right then, indeed, to recommend to me my Lord Derford.

LADY HON. O yes, he will make the prettiest husband in the world ; you may fly about yourself as wild as a lark, and keep him the whole time as tame as a jack-daw. And tho he may complain of you to your friends, he will never have the courage to find fault to your face. But as to Mortimer, you will not be able to govern him as long as you live ; for the moment you have put him upon the fret, you will fall into the dumps yourself, hold out your hand to him and losing the opportunity of gaining some material point, make up with him at the first soft word.

CEC. You think then the quarrel more amusing than the recollection ?

LADY HON. O, a thousand times ! for while you are quarreling, you may say any thing and demand any thing, but when you are reconciled, you ought to behave pretty, and seem contented.

CEC. If any gentleman has any pretensions to your ladyship, he must be made very happy indeed to hear your principles.

LADY HON. O, it would not signify at all ; for one's fathers and uncles and such people always make connections for one ; and not a soul thinks of our principles till they find them out by our conduct ; and no body can possibly find them out till we are married, for they give us no power before hand. The men know nothing of us in the world, while we are single, but how we can dance a minuet or play a lesson upon the harpsichord.

DEL. And what else need a young lady of rank desire to be known for ? Your ladyship surely would not have her degrade herself by studying like an artist or professor ?

LADY HON. O, no, Sir, I would not have her study at all ; it's mighty well for children ; but really after sixteen, and when one is come out, one has quite fatigue enough in dressing and going to public places and ordering new things, without all the torment of first and second position, and E upon the first line, and F upon the first space.

DEL. But pardon me, Madam, for hinting that a young lady of condition, who has a proper sense of her dignity, cannot be seen too rarely or known too little,

LADY HON. O, but I hate dignity ! for it is the dullest thing in the world. I have always thought, Sir, it was owing to that you was so little amusing—really I beg your pardon, Sir, I meant to say so little talkative.

DEL. I can easily believe your ladyship spoke hastily ; for it will hardly be supposed that a person of *my* family came into the world for the purpose of amusing it.

LADY HON. O, no, Sir, nobody, I am sure, ever knew you to have such a thought, [*turning to Cecilia with a low voice.*] You cannot imagine, my dear Mrs. Mortimer, how I detest this old cousin of mine ! Now, pray tell me honestly, if you don't hate him yourself.

CEC. I hope, Madam, to have no reason to hate him.

LADY HON. La, how you are always upon your guard ! If I were half as cautious, I should die of the vapors in a month : the only thing that keeps me at all alive, is now and then making people angry ; for the folks at our house let me go out so seldom and then send me with such stupid company, that giving them a little torment is really the only entertainment I have. O—but I had almost forgot to tell you a most delightful thing !

CEC. What is it ?

LADY HON. Why you must know I have the greatest hopes in the world that my father will quarrel with old Mr. Delvill !

CEC. And is that such a delightful thing ?

LADY HON. O yes : I have lived upon the very idea this fortnight ; for then, you know, they'll both be in a passion and I shall see which of them looks frightfullest.

MORTIMER DEL. When lady Honoria talks aside, I always suspect some mischief.

LADY HON. No, no, I was only congratulating Mrs. Mortimer about her marriage. Tho really upon second thoughts, I don't know but I ought to condole with her, for I have long been convinced she has a prodigious antipathy to you. I saw it the whole time I was at Delvill Castle, where she used to change color at the very sound of your name ; a symptom I never perceived when I talked to her of Lord Derford, who would certainly have made her a thousand times better husband.

DEL. If you mean on account of his title, lady Honoria, your ladyship must be strangely forgetful of the connections of your family ; for Mortimer, after the death of his uncle,

and myself, must inevitably inherit a title far more honorable, than any which can be offered by a new sprung up family, like my Lord Ernolf's.

LADY HON. Yes, Sir ; but then you know she would have kept her estate, which would have been a vastly better thing than an old pedigree of new relations. Besides, I don't find that any body cares for the noble blood of the Delvill's but themselves ; and if she had kept her fortune, every body, I fancy, would have cared for *that*.

DEL. Every body then, must be highly mercenary and ignoble, or the blood of an ancient and honorable house, would be thought contaminated by the most distant hint of so degrading a comparison.

LADY HON. Dear Sir, what should we all do with *birth*, if it was not for *wealth* ? It would neither take us to Ranelagh nor the opera ; nor buy us caps nor wigs, nor supply us with dinners nor bouquets.

DEL. Caps and wigs, dinners and bouquets ! Your ladyship's estimate of wealth is extremely minute indeed !

LADY HON. Why you know, Sir, as to caps and wigs, they are very serious things, for we should look mighty droll figures to go about bareheaded ; and as to dinners, how would the Delvill's have lasted all these thousand centuries, if they had disdained eating them ?

DEL. Whatever may be your ladyships satisfaction in depreciating a house that has the honor of being nearly allied to your own, you will not, I hope at least, instruct this lady [*turning to Cecilia*] to imbibe a similar contempt of its antiquity and dignity.

MORT. DEL. This lady, by becoming one of it, will at least secure us from the danger that such contempt will spread further.

CEC. Let me only be as secure from *exciting* as I am from *feeling* contempt, and I can wish no more.

DR. LYS. Good and excellent young lady ; the first of blessings indeed is yours in the temperance of your own mind. When you began your career in life, you appeared to us short-sighted mortals, to possess more than *your* share of good things. Such a union of riches, beauty, independence, talents, education, virtue, seemed a monopoly to raise general envy and discontent ; but mark with what exactness the good and the bad is ever balanced ! You have had a thousand sorrows to which those who have looked up to



you, have been total strangers, and which balance all your advantages for happiness. There is a levelling principle in the world, at war with pre-eminence, which finally put us all upon a footing.

DEL. Not quite. I think an ancient and respectable family——

LADY HON. With a handsome income and high life gives one a mighty chance for happiness. Don't you think so, Mortimer?

MORT. DEL. I do, indeed; but add, a connection with an amiable woman, and I think the chances for happiness are more than doubled.

DR. LYS. Right, Mortimer; we are well agreed.

## ADDITIONAL LESSONS.

### *Directions how to spend our Time.*

1. **W**E all of us complain of the shortness of time, saith *Seneca*, and yet have much more than we know what to do with. Our lives, says he, are spent either in doing nothing at all, or in doing nothing to the purpose, or in doing nothing that we ought to do; we are always complaining our days are few, and acting as though there would be no end of them. That noble philosopher has described our inconsistency with ourselves in this particular, by all those various turns of expression and thought which are peculiar to his writings.

2. I often consider mankind as wholly inconsistent with itself in a point that bears some affinity to the former. Though we seem grieved at the shortness of life in general, we are wishing every period of it at an end. The minor longs to be at age, then to be a man of business, then to make up an estate, then to arrive at honours, then to retire. Thus, although the whole of life is allowed by every one to be short, the several divisions of it appear long and tedious.

3. We are for lengthening our span in general, but would fain contract the parts of which it is composed. The usurer would be very well satisfied to have all the time annihilated that lies between the present moment and next quarter day. The politician would be contented to loose three years in his

life, could he place things in the posture which he fancies they will stand in after such a revolution of time.

4. The lover would be glad to strike out of his existence all the moments that are to pass away before the happy meeting. Thus, as far as our time runs, we should be very glad in most parts of our lives, that it ran much faster than it does. Several hours of the day hang upon our hands, nay, we wish away whole years; and travel through time as through a country filled with many wild and empty wastes, which we would fain hurry over, that we may arrive at those several little settlements or imaginary points of rest, which are dispersed up and down in it.

5. If we may divide the life of most men into twenty parts, we shall find, that at least nineteen of them are mere gaps and chasms, which are neither filled with pleasure nor business. I do not however include in this calculation the life of those men who are in a perpetual hurry of affairs, but of those only who are not always engaged in scenes of action; and I hope I shall not do an unacceptable piece of service to these persons, if I point out to them certain methods for the filling up their empty spaces of life. The methods I shall propose to them are as follow:

6. The first is the exercise of virtue, in the most general acceptation of the word. That particular scheme which comprehends the social virtues, may give employment to the most industrious temper, and find a man in business more than the most active station of life. To advise the ignorant, relieve the needy, comfort the afflicted, are duties that fall in our way almost every day of our lives.

7. A man has frequent opportunities of mitigating the fierceness of a party; of doing justice to the character of a deserving man; of softening the envious, quieting the angry, and rectifying the prejudiced; which are all of them employments suited to a reasonable nature, and bring great satisfaction to the person who can busy himself in them with discretion.

8. There is another kind of virtue that may find employment for those retired hours in which we are altogether left to ourselves, and destitute of company and conversation; I mean that intercourse and communication which every reasonable creature ought to maintain with the great Author of his being.

9. The man who lives under an habitual sense of the divine presence, keeps up a perpetual chearfulness of temper, and enjoys every moment the satisfaction of thinking himself in company with his dearest and best of friends. The time never lies heavy upon him; it is impossible for him to be alone.

10. His thoughts and passions are the most busied at such hours when those of other men are the most unactive; he no sooner steps out of the world, but his heart burns with devotion, swells with hope, and triumphs in the consciousness of that presence which every where surrounds him; or, on the contrary, pours out its fears, its sorrows, its apprehensions, to the great supporter of its existence.

11. I have here only considered the necessity of a man's being virtuous, that he may have something to do; but if we consider further, that the exercise of virtue is not only an amusement for the time it lasts, but that its influence extends to those parts of our existence which lie beyond the grave, and that our whole eternity is to take its colour from those hours which we here employ in virtue or in vice, the argument redoubles upon us, for putting in practice this method of passing away our time.

12. When a man has but a little stock to improve, and has opportunities of turning it all to good account, what shall we think of him if he suffers nineteen parts of it to lie dead, and perhaps employs even the twentieth to his ruin or disadvantage? But because the mind cannot be always in its fervour nor strained up to a pitch of virtue, it is necessary to find out proper employments for it in its relaxations.

13. The next method therefore that I would propose to fill up our time, should be useful and innocent diversion. I must confess I think it is below reasonable creatures to be altogether conversant in such diversions as are merely innocent, and having nothing else to recommend them but that there is no hurt in them.

14. Whether any kind of gaming has even thus much to say for itself, I shall not determine; but I think it is very wonderful to see persons of the best sense, passing away a dozen hours together in shuffling and dividing a pack of cards with no other conversation but what is made up of a few game phrases, and no other ideas but those of black or red spots ranged together in different figures. Would not a

man laugh to hear any one of his species complaining that life is short?

15. The stage might be made a perpetual source of the most noble and useful entertainments, were it under proper regulations.

But the mind never unbends itself so agreeably as in the conversation of a well-chosen friend. There is indeed no blessing of life that is any way comparable to the enjoyment of a discreet and virtuous friend. It eases and unloads the mind, clears and improves the understanding, engenders thoughts and knowledge, animates virtue and good resolution, soothes and allays the passions, and finds employment for most of the vacant hours of life.

16. Next to such an intimacy with a particular person, one would endeavour after a more general conversation with such as are able to entertain and improve those with whom they converse, which are qualifications that seldom go asunder.

There are many other useful amusements of life, which one would endeavor to multiply, that one might on all occasions have recourse to something rather than suffer the mind to lie idle, or run adrift with any passion that chances to rise in it.

17. A man that has a taste in music, painting, or architecture, is like one that has another sense when compared with such as have no relish of those arts. The florist, the planter, the gardener; the husbandman, when they are only as accomplishments to the man of fortune, are great reliefs to a country life, and many ways useful to those who are possessed of them.

SPECTATOR, No. 93.



### *Modesty.*

**M**ODESTY is the citadel of beauty and virtue. The first of all virtues is innocence; the second is modesty.

1. Modesty is both in its source, and in its consequence, a very great happiness to the fair possessor of it; it arises from a fear of dishonour, and a good conscience, and is followed immediately, upon its first appearance, with the reward of honour and esteem, paid by all those who discover it in any body living.

2. It is indeed, a virtue in a woman (that might other-



wife be very disagreeable to one) so exquisitely delicate, that it excites in any beholder, of a generous and manly disposition, almost all the passions, that he would be apt to conceive for the mistress of his heart, in variety of circumstances.

3. A woman that is modest creates in us an awe in her company, a wish for her welfare, a joy in her being actually happy, a sore and painful sorrow if distress should come upon her, a ready and willing heart to give her consolation, and a compassionate temper towards her, in every little accident of life she undergoes; and, to sum up all in one word, it causes such a kind of angelical love, even to a stranger, as good-natured brothers and sisters usually bear towards one another.

4. It adds wonderfully to the make of a face, and I have seen a pretty well turned forehead, fine set eyes, and what your poets call, a row of pearl set in coral, shewn by a pretty expansion of two velvet lips that covered them (that would have tempted any sober man living of my own age, to have been a little loose in his thoughts, and to have enjoyed a painful pleasure amidst his impotency,) lose all their virtue, all their force and efficacy, by having an ugly cast of boldness very discernibly spread out at large over all those alluring features.

5. At the same time modesty will fill up the wrinkles of old age with glory; make sixty blush itself into sixteen; and help a green-sick girl to defeat the satire of a false waggish lover, who might compare her colour, when she looked like a ghost, to the blowing of the rose-bud, by blushing herself into a bloom of beauty; and might make what he meant a reflection, a real compliment, at any hour of the day, in spite of his teeth. It has a prevailing power with me, whenever I find it in the sex.

6. I who have the common fault of old men, to be very sour and humourfome, when I drink my water-gruel in a morning, fell into a more than ordinary pet with a maid, whom I call my nurse, from a constant tenderness, that I have observed her to exercise towards me beyond all my other servants; I perceived her flush and glow in the face, in a manner which I could plainly discern proceeded not from anger or resentment of my correction, but from a good-natured regret, upon a fear that she had offended her grave old master.

7. I was so heartily pleased, that I eased her of the honest

trouble she underwent inwardly for my sake; and giving her half a crown, I told her it was a forfeit due to her because I was out of humour with her without any reason at all. And as she is so gentle-hearted, I have diligently avoided giving her one harsh word ever since; and I find my own reward in it: for not being so testy as I used, has made me much haler and stronger than I was before.

The pretty, and witty, and virtuous *Simplicia*, was, the other day, visiting with an old aunt of her's, that I verily believe has read the *Atalantis*: she took a story out there, and dressed up an old honest neighbour in the second-hand cloaths of scandal. The young creature hid her face with her fan at every burst and peal of laughter, and blushed for her guilty parent; by which she atoned, methought, for every scandal that ran round the beautiful circle.

9. As I was going home to bed that evening, I could not help thinking of her all the way I went. I represented her to myself as shedding holy blood every time she blushed, and as being a martyr in the cause of virtue. And afterwards, when I was putting on my night-cap, I could not drive the thought out of my head, but that I was young enough to be married to her; and that it would be an addition to the reputation I have in the study of wisdom, to marry to so much youth and modesty, even in my old age.

10. I know there have not been wanting many wicked objections against this virtue; one is grown insufferably common. The fellow blushes, he is guilty. I should say rather, he blushes, therefore he is innocent. I believe the same man, that first had that wicked imagination of a blush being the sign of guilt, represented good-nature to be folly; and that he himself, was the most inhuman and impudent wretch alive.

11. The author of *Cato*, who is known to be one of the most modest and most ingenious persons of the age we now live in, has given this virtue a delicate name in the tragedy of *Cato*, where the character of *Marcia* is first opened to us. I would have all ladies who have a mind to be thought well-bred, to think seriously on this virtue, which he so beautifully calls the sanctity of manners.

12. Modesty is a polite accomplishment, and generally an attendant upon merit. It is engaging to the highest degree, and wins the hearts of all our acquaintance. On the con-

trary, none are more disgustful in company than the impudent and presuming.

The man who is, on all occasions, commending and speaking well of himself, we naturally dislike. On the other hand, he who studies to conceal his own defects, who does justice to the merit of others, who talks but little of himself, and that with modesty, makes a favorable impression on the persons he is conversing with, captivates their minds, and gains their esteem.

13. Modesty, however, widely differs from an awkward bashfulness, which is as much to be condemned as the other is to be applauded. To appear simple is as ill-bred as to be impudent. A young man ought to be able to come into a room and address the company without the least embarrassment. To be out of countenance when spoken to, and not to have an answer ready, is ridiculous to the last degree.

14. An awkward country fellow, when he comes into company better than himself, is exceedingly disconcerted. He knows not what to do with his hands or his hat, but either puts one of them in his pocket, and dangles the other by his side ; or perhaps twirls his hat on his fingers, or fumbles with the button. If spoken to he is in a much worse situation ; he answers with the utmost difficulty, and nearly stammers ; whereas a gentleman, who is acquainted with life, enters a room with gracefulness and a modest assurance addresses even persons he does not know, in an easy and natural manner, and without the least embarrassment.

15. This is the characteristic of good-breeding, a very necessary knowledge in our intercourse with men : for one of inferior parts, with the behavior of a gentleman, is frequently better received than a man of sense, with the address and manners of a clown. Ignorance and vice are the only things we need be ashamed of ; steer clear of these, and you may go into any company you will : not that I would have a young man throw off all dread of appearing abroad, as a fear of offending, or being disesteemed, will make him preserve a proper decorum.

16. Some persons, from experiencing of false modesty, have run into the other extreme, and acquired the character of impudent. This is as great a fault as the other. A well-bred man keeps himself within the two, and steers the middle way. He is easy and firm in every company ; is modest, but not bashful ; steady but not impudent. He copies

the manners of the better people, and conforms to their customs with ease and attention.

17. Till we can present ourselves in all companies with coolness and unconcern, we can never present ourselves well; nor will a man ever be supposed to have kept good company, or ever be acceptable in such company, if he cannot appear there easy and unembarrassed. A modest assurance, in every part of life, is the most advantageous qualification we can possibly acquire.

18. Instead of becoming insolent, a man of sense under a consciousness of merit, is more modest. He behaves himself indeed with firmness, but without the least presumption. The man who is ignorant of his own merit, is no less a fool than he who is constantly displaying it. A man of understanding avails himself of his abilities, but never boasts of them; whereas the timid and bashful can never push himself in life to his merit as great as it will; he will be always kept behind by the forward and the bustling.

19. A man of abilities, and acquainted with life, will stand as firm in defence of his own rights, and pursue his plans as steadily and unmoved as the most impudent man alive; but then he does it with a seeming modesty. Thus, manner is every thing; what is impudence in one is proper assurance only in another; for firmness is commendable, but an overbearing conduct is disgusting.

20. Forwardness being the very reverse of modesty, follow rather than lead the company; that is, join in discourse, upon their subjects rather than start one of your own; if you have parts you will have opportunities enough of shewing them on every topic of conversation, and if you have none, it is better to expose yourself upon a subject of other people's than on one of your own.

21. But be particularly careful not to speak of yourself if you can help it. An impudent fellow lugs in himself abruptly upon all occasions, and is ever the hero of his own story. Others will colour their arrogance with, "it may seem strange indeed, that I should talk in this manner of myself; it is what I by no means like, and should never do, if I had not been cruelly and unjustly accused; but when my character is attacked, it is a justice I owe to myself to defend it." This veil is too thin not to be seen through on the first inspection.

22. Others again with more art, will *modestly* boast of





with a life which is every moment obnoxious to the greatest dangers. Writers of this complexion have observed, that the sacred person who was the great pattern of perfection, was never seen to laugh.

3. Chearfulness of mind is not liable to any of these exceptions; it is of a serious and composed nature; it does not throw the mind into a condition improper for the present state of humanity, and is very conspicuous in the characters of those who are looked upon as the greatest philosophers among the heathens, as well as among those who have been deservedly esteemed as saints and holy men among christians.

4. If we consider chearfulness in three lights, with regard to ourselves, to those we converse with, and to the great Author of our being, it will not a little recommend itself on each of these accounts. The man who is possessed of this excellent frame of mind, is not only easy in his thoughts, but a perfect master of all the powers and faculties of the soul: his imagination is always clear, and his judgment undisturbed: his temper is even and unruffled, whether in action or solitude. He comes with a relish to all those goods which nature has provided for him, tastes all the pleasures of the creation which are poured about him, and does not feel the full weight of those accidental evils which may befall him.

5. If we consider him in relation to the persons whom he converses with, it naturally produces love and good will towards him. A chearful mind is not only disposed to be affable and obliging, but raises the same good humor in those who come within its influence. A man finds himself pleased he does not know why, with the chearfulness of his companion: it is like a sudden sun-shine that awakens a secret delight in the mind, without her attending to it. The heart rejoices of its own accord, and naturally flows out into friendship and benevolence towards the person who has so kindly an effect upon it.

6. When I consider this chearful state of mind in its third relation, I cannot but look upon it as a constant habitual gratitude to the great Author of nature. An inward chearfulness is an implicit praise and thanksgiving to Providence under all its dispensations. It is a kind of acquiescence in the state wherein we are placed, and a secret approbation of the Divine will in his conduct towards man.

7. There are but two things, which in my opinion, can reasonably deprive us of this chearfulness of heart. The

first of these is the sense of guilt. A man who lives in a state of vice and impenitence can have no title to that evenness and tranquility of mind which is the health of the soul, and the natural effect of virtue and innocence. Chearfulness in an ill man deserves a harder name than language can furnish us with, and is many degrees beyond what we commonly call folly or madness.

8 Atheism, by which I mean a disbelief of a Supreme Being, and consequently of a future state, under whatsoever title it shelters itself, may likewise very reasonably deprive a man of this chearfulness of temper. There is something so particularly gloomy and offensive to human nature in the prospect of non-existence, that I cannot but wonder, with many excellent writers, how it is possible for a man to outlive the expectation of it. For my own part, I think the being of a God is so little to be doubted, that it is almost the only truth we are sure of, and such a truth as we meet with in every object, in every occurrence, and in every thought.

9. If we look into the characters of this tribe of infidels, we generally find they are made up of pride, spleen, and cavil: it is indeed no wonder, that men, who are uneasy to themselves, should be so to the rest of the world; and how is it possible for a man to be otherwise than uneasy in himself, who is in danger every moment of losing his entire existence, and dropping into nothing?

10. The vicious man and Atheist have therefore no pretence to chearfulness, and would act very unreasonably, should they endeavour after it. It is impossible for any one to live in good humour, and enjoy his present existence, who is apprehensive either of torment or of annihilation; of being miserable, or of not being at all.

After having mentioned these two great principles, which are destructive of chearfulness in their own nature, as well as in right reason, I cannot think of any other that ought to banish this happy temper from a virtuous mind. Pain and sickness, shame and reproach, poverty and old age, nay death itself, considering the shortness of their duration, and the advantage we may reap from them, do not deserve the name of evils.

11. A good mind may bear up under them with fortitude, with indolence, and with chearfulness of heart—the tossing of a tempest does not discompose him, which he is sure will bring him to a joyful harbour.

A man who uses his best endeavours to live according to the dictates of virtue and right reason, has two perpetual sources of chearfulness, in the consideration of his own nature and of that Being on whom he has a dependence.

12. If he looks into himself, he cannot but rejoice in that existence, which is so lately bestowed upon him, and which, after millions of ages, will be still new, and still in its beginning. How many self-congratulations naturally arise in the mind, when it reflects on this its entrance into eternity, when it takes a view of those improveable faculties, which in a few years, and even at its first setting out, have made so considerable a progress, and which will be still receiving an increase of perfection, and consequently an increase of happiness?

13. The consciousness of such a being spreads a perpetual diffusion of joy through the soul of a virtuous man, and makes him look upon himself every moment as more happy than he knows how to conceive.

The second source of chearfulness to a good mind is, its consideration of that Being on whom we have our dependence, and in whom, though we behold him as yet but in the first faint discoveries of his perfections, we see every thing that we can imagine as great, glorious, or amiable. We find ourselves every where upheld by his goodness, and surrounded by an immensity of love and mercy.

14. In short, we depend upon a Being, whose power qualifies him to make us happy by an infinity of means, whose goodness and truth engage him to make those happy who desire it of him, and whose unchangeableness will secure us in this happiness to all eternity.

Such considerations, which every one should perpetually cherish in his thoughts, will banish from us all that secret heaviness of heart which unthinking men are subject to when they lie under no real affliction, all that anguish which we may feel from any evil that actually oppresses us, to which I may likewise add those little cracklings of mirth and folly, that are apter to betray virtue than support it; and establish in us such an even and cheerful temper, as makes us pleasing to ourselves, to those with whom we converse, and to him whom we are made to please.



*Discretion.*

1. **I** HAVE often thought if the minds of men were laid open, we should see but little difference between that of the wise man and that of the fool. There are infinite reveries, numberless extravagancies, and a perpetual train of vanities, which pass through both. The great difference is, that the first knows how to pick and cull his thoughts for conversation, by suppressing some, and communicating others; whereas the other lets them all indifferently fly out in words. This sort of discretion, however, has no place in private conversation between intimate friends. On such occasions the wisest men very often talk like the weakest; for indeed the talking with a friend is nothing else but thinking aloud.

2. *Tully* has therefore very justly exposed a precept delivered by some ancient writers, that a man should live with his enemy in such a manner, as might leave him room to become his friend; and with his friend in such a manner, that if he became his enemy, it should not be in his power to hurt him. The first part of this rule, which regards our behaviour towards an enemy, is indeed very reasonable as well as prudential; but the latter part of it, which regards our behaviour towards a friend, favours more of cunning than of discretion, and would cut a man off from the greatest pleasures of life, which are the freedoms of conversation with a bosom friend. Besides, that when a friend is turned into an enemy, and (as the son of *Sirach* calls him) a betrayer of secrets, the world is just enough to excuse the perfidiousness of the friend, rather than the indiscretion of the person who confided in him.

3. Discretion does not only shew itself in words, but in all the circumstances of action; and is like an under-agent of Providence, to guide and direct us in the ordinary concerns of life.

There are many more shining qualities in the mind of man, but there is none so useful as discretion; it is this indeed which gives a value to all the rest, which sets them at work in their proper times and places, and turns them to the advantage of the person who is possessed of them. Without it, learning is pedantry, and wit impertinence; virtue itself looks like weakness; the best parts only qualify a man to be more sprightly in errors, and active to his own prejudice.

4. Nor does discretion only make a man the master of his own parts, but of other men's. The discreet man finds out the talents of those he converses with, and knows how to apply them to proper uses. Accordingly, if we look into particular communities and divisions of men, we may observe, that it is the discreet man, not the witty, nor the learned, nor the brave, who guides the conversation, and gives measures to the society. A man with great talents, but void of discretion, is like *Polyphemus* in the fable, strong and blind, endued with an irresistible force, which, for want of sight, is of no use to him.

5. Though a man has all other perfections, and wants discretion, he will be of no great consequence in the world ; but if he has this single talent in perfection, and but a common share of others, he may do what he pleases in his station of life.

At the same time that I think discretion the most useful talent a man can be master of, I look upon cunning to be the accomplishment of little, mean, ungenerous minds. Discretion points out the noblest ends to us, and pursues the most proper and laudable methods of attaining them : cunning has only private selfish aims, and sticks at nothing which may make them succeed.

6. Discretion has large and extended views, and like a well-formed eye, commands a whole horizon : cunning is a kind of short-sightedness, that discovers the minutest objects which are near at hand, but is not able to discern things at a distance. Discretion, the more it is discovered, gives a greater authority to the person who possesses it : cunning, when it is once detected, loses its force, and makes a man incapable of bringing about even those events which he might have done, had he passed only for a plain man. Discretion is the perfection of reason, and a guide to us in all the duties of life : cunning is a kind of instinct that only looks out after our immediate interest and welfare.

7. discretion is only found in men of strong sense and good understandings : cunning is often to be met with in brutes themselves, and in persons who are but the fewest removes from them. In short, cunning is only the mimic of discretion, and may pass upon weak men, in the same manner as vivacity is often mistaken for wit, and gravity for wisdom.

The cast of mind which is natural to a discreet man, makes him look forward into futurity, and consider what will be his condition millions of ages hence, as well as what it is at present.

8. He knows, that the misery or happiness which are reserved for him in another world, lose nothing of their reality by being placed at so great a distance from him. The objects do not appear little to him because they are remote. He considers that those pleasures and pains which lie hid in eternity, approach nearer to him every moment, and will be present with him in their full weight and measure, as much as those pains and pleasures which he feels at this very instant. For this reason he is careful to secure to himself that which is the proper happiness of his nature, and the ultimate design of his being.

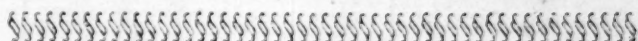
9. He carries his thoughts to the end of every action, and considers the most distant as well as the most immediate effects of it. He supercedes every little prospect of gain and advantage which offers itself here, if he does not find it consistent with his views of an hereafter. In a word, his hopes are full of immortality, his schemes are large and glorious, and his conduct suitable to one who knows his true interest, and how to pursue it by proper methods.

10. I have in this essay upon discretion, considered it both as an accomplishment and as a virtue, and have therefore described it in its full extent ; not only as it is conversant about worldly affairs, but as it regards our whole existence ; not only as it is the guide of a mortal creature, but as it is in general the director of a reasonable being. It is in this light that discretion is represented by the wise man, who sometimes mentions it under the name of discretion, and sometimes under that of wisdom.

11. It is indeed (as described in the latter part of this paper) the greatest wisdom, but at the same time in the power of every one to attain. Its advantages are infinite, but its acquisition easy ; or, to speak of her in the words of the apocryphal writer, " Wisdom is glorious, and never fadeth away, yet she is easily seen of them that love her, and found of such as seek her.

12. " She preventeth them that desire her, in making herself first known unto them. He that seeketh her early shall have no great travel : for he shall find her sitting at his doors. To think therefore upon her is perfection of

“ wisdom, and whoso watcheth for her shall quickly be  
 “ without care. For she goeth about seeking such as are  
 “ worthy of her, sheweth herself favourably unto them in  
 “ the ways, and meeteth them in every thought.”



*Drunkenness.*

1. **N**O vices are so incurable as those which men are apt to glory in. One would wonder how drunkenness should have the good luck to be of this number. *Anarchasis*, being invited to a match of drinking at Corinth, demanded the prize very humorously, because he was drunk before any of the rest of the company ; for, says he, when we run a race, he who arrives at the goal first, is entitled to the reward.

2. On the contrary, in this thirsty generation, the honour falls upon him who carries off the greatest quantity of liquor, and knocks down the rest of the company. I was the other day with honest *Will Funnell*, the West-Saxon, who was reckoning up how much liquor had passed through him in the last twenty years of his life, which, according to his computation, amounted to twenty-three hogheads of october, four ton of port, half a kilderkin of small-beer, nineteen barrels of cyder, and three glasses of champagne ; besides which he had assisted at four hundred bowls of punch, not to mention sips, drams, and whets without number.

3. I question not but every reader's memory will suggest to him several ambitious young men, who are as vain in this particular as *Will Funnell*, and can boast of as glorious exploits.

Our modern philosophers observe, that there is a general decay of moisture in the globe of the earth. This they chiefly ascribe to the growth of vegetables, which incorporate into their own substance many fluid bodies that never return again in their former nature :

4. But with submission, they ought to throw into their account, those innumerable rational beings which fetch their nourishment chiefly out of liquids ; especially when we consider that men, compared with their fellow creatures, drink much more than comes to their share.

5. But however highly this tribe of people may think of themselves, a drunken man is a greater monster than any that is to be found among all the creatures which God has



made : as indeed there is no character which appears more despicable and deformed, in the eyes of all reasonable persons, than that of a drunkard.

6. *Bonofus*, one of our own countrymen, who was addicted to this vice, having set up for a share in the Roman empire, and being defeated in a great battle, hanged himself. When he was seen by the army in this melancholy situation, notwithstanding he had behaved himself very bravely, the common jest was, that the thing they saw hanging upon the tree before them, was not a man, but a bottle.

7. This vice has very fatal effects on the mind, the body, and fortune of the person who is devoted to it.

In regard to the mind, it first of all discovers every flaw in it. The sober man, by the strength of reason, may keep under and subdue every vice or folly to which he is most inclined ; but wine makes every latent seed sprout up in the soul, and shew itself : it gives fury to the passions, and force to these objects which are apt to produce them.

8. When a young fellow complained to an old philosopher that his wife was not handsome, put less water in your wine, says the philosopher, and you'll quickly make her so. Wine heightens indifference into love, love into jealousy, and jealousy into madness. It often turns the good-natured man into an idiot, and the cholerick into an assassin. It gives bitterness to resentment, it makes vanity insupportable, and displays every little spot of the soul in its utmost deformity.

9. Nor does this vice only betray the hidden faults of a man, and shew them in the most odious colours, but often occasions faults to which he is not naturally subject. There is more of turn than of truth in a saying of *Seneca*, that drunkenness does not produce, but discover faults. Common experience teaches the contrary.

10. Wine throws a man out of himself, and infuses qualities into the mind, which she is a stranger to in her sober moments. The person you converse with, after the third bottle, is not the same man who at first sat down at the table with you. Upon this maxim is founded one of the prettiest sayings I ever met with, which is inscribed to *Publius Syrus*. *He who jests upon a man that is drunk, injures the absent.*

11. Thus does drunkenness act in direct contradiction to reason, whose business it is to clear the mind of every

vice which is crept into it, and to guard it against all the approaches of any that endeavour to make its entrance. But besides these ill effects which this vice produces in the person who is actually under its dominion, it has also a bad influence on the mind, even in its sober moments, as it insensibly weakens the understanding, impairs the memory, and makes those faults habitual which are produced by frequent excesses : it wastes the estate, banishes reputation, consumes the body, and renders a man of the brightest parts the common jest of an insignificant clown.

12. A method of spending one's time agreeably is a thing so little studied, that the common amusement of our young gentlemen (especially of such as are at a distance from those of the first breeding) is drinking. This way of entertainment has custom on its side ; but as much as it has prevailed, I believe there have been very few companies that have been guilty of excess this way, where there have not happened more accidents which make against, than for the continuance of it.

13. It is very common that events arise from a debauch which are fatal, and always such as are disagreeable. With all a man's reason and good sense about him, his tongue is apt to utter things out of a mere gaiety of heart, which may displease his best friends. Who then would trust himself to the power of wine, without saying more against it, than that it raises the imagination and depresses the judgment ?

14. Were there only this single consideration, that we are less masters of ourselves when we drink in the least proportion above the exigencies of thirst : I say, were this all that could be objected, it were sufficient to make us abhor this vice. But we may go on to say, that as he who drinks but a little is not master of himself, so he who drinks much is a slave to himself.

15. As for my part, I ever esteemed a drunkard of all vicious persons the most vicious : for if our actions are to be weighed and considered according to the intention of them, what can we think of him who puts himself into a circumstance wherein he can have no intention at all, but incapacitates himself for the duties and offices of life, by a suspension of all his faculties.

16. If a man considers that he cannot, under the oppression of drink, be a friend, a gentleman, a master, or a sub-

ject ; that he has so long banished himself from all that is dear, and given up all that is sacred to him, he would even then think of a debauch with horror : but when he looks still further, and acknowledges that he is not only expelled out of all the relations of life, but also liable to offend against them all, what words can express the terror and detestation he would have of such a condition ? And yet he owns all this of himself who says he was drunk last night.

17. As I have all along persisted in it, that all the vicious in general are in a state of death, so I think I may add to the non-existence of drunkards, that they died by their own hands. He is certainly as guilty of suicide who perishes by a slow, as he that is dispatched by an immediate poison.

18. In my last lucubration I proposed the general use of water-gruel, and hinted that it might not be amiss at this very season : but as there are some, whose cases, in regard to their families, will not admit of delay, I have used my interest in several wards of the city, that the wholesome restorative above-mentioned may be given in tavern kitchens to all the mornings draught men within the walls when they call for wine before noon.

19. For a further restraint and mark upon such persons, I have given orders, that in all the offices where policies are drawn upon lives, it shall be added to the article which prohibits that the nominee should cross the sea, the words, *Provided also, That the above-mentioned, A. B. shall not drink before dinner during the term mentioned in this indenture.*

20. I am not without hopes that by this method I shall bring some unfixable friends of mine into shape and breadth, as well as others who are languid and consumptive into health and vigour. Most of the self-murderers whom I yet hinted at, are such as preserve a certain regularity in taking their poison, and make it mix pretty well with their food :

21. But the most conspicuous of those who destroy themselves, are such as in their youth fall into this sort of debauchery, and contract a certain uneasiness of spirit, which is not to be diverted but by tipling as often as they can fall into company in the day, and conclude with downright drunkenness at night. These gentlemen never knew the satisfaction of youth, but skip the years of manhood, and are decrepit soon after they are of age.

22. I was godfather to one of these old fellows. He is now three and thirty, which is the grand climacteric of a young drunkard. I went to visit the crazy wretch this morning, with no other purpose but to rally him, under the pain and uneasiness of being sober.

But as our faults are double when they effect others besides ourselves, so this vice is still more odious in a married than a single man.

23. He that is the husband of a woman of honour, and comes home overloaded with wine, is still more contemptible, in proportion to the regard we have to the unhappy consort of his bestiality. The imagination cannot shape to itself any thing more monstrous and unnatural, than the familiarities between drunkenness and chastity. The wretched *Astræa*, who is the perfection of beauty and innocence, has long been thus condemned for life. The romantic tales of virgins devoted to the jaws of monsters, have nothing in them so terrible, as the gift of *Astræa* to that bacchanal.

24. The reflection of such a match as spotless innocence with abandoned lewdness, is what puts this vice in the worst figure it can bear with regard to others; but when it is looked upon with respect only to the drunkard himself, it has deformities enough to make it disagreeable, which may be summed up in a word, by allowing, that he who resigns his reason, is actually guilty of all that he is liable to from the want of reason.

TATLER.



*On Cleanliness.*

SPECTATOR, No. 631.

1. I HAD occasion to go a few miles out of town, some days since, in a stage-coach, where I had for my fellow travellers, a dirty beau, and a pretty young Quaker woman. Having no inclination to talk much at that time, I placed myself backward, with a design to survey them, and pick a speculation out of my two companions. Their different figures were sufficient of themselves to draw my attention.

2. The gentleman was dressed in a suit, the ground whereof had been black, as I perceived from some few spaces that had escaped the powder, which was incorporated with the greatest part of his coat; his perriwig, which cost no small sum, was after so slovenly a manner cast over his shoulders,



that it seemed not to have been combed since the year 1712; his linen, which was not much concealed, was daubed with plain Spanish from the chin to the lowest button, and the diamond upon his finger (which naturally dreaded the water,) put me in mind how it sparkled amidst the rubbish of the mine where it was first discovered.

3. On the other hand, the pretty Quaker appeared in all the elegance of cleanliness. Not a speck was to be found on her. A clear, clean, oval face, just edged about with little thin plaits of the purest cambric, received great advantages from the shade of her black hood; as did the whiteness of her arms from that sober-coloured stuff in which she had clothed herself. The plainness of her dress was very well suited to the simplicity of her phrases, all which put together, though they could not give me a great opinion of her religion, they did of her innocence.

4. This adventure occasioned my throwing together a few hints upon *cleanliness*, which I shall consider as one of the half virtues, as Aristotle calls them, and shall recommend it under the three following heads: As it is a mark of politeness; as it produceth love; and as it bears analogy to purity of mind.

5. First, it is a mark of politeness. It is universally agreed upon, that no one, unadorned with this virtue, can go into company without giving a manifest offence. The easier or higher any one's fortune is, this duty rises proportionably. The different nations of the world are as much distinguished by their cleanliness, as by their arts and sciences. The more any country is civilized, the more they consult this part of politeness. We need but compare our ideas of a female *Hottentot* with an *English* beauty, to be satisfied of the truth of what hath been advanced.

6. In the next place, cleanliness may be said to be the foster-mother of love. Beauty, indeed, most commonly produces that passion in the mind, but cleanliness preserves it. An indifferent face and person, kept in perpetual neatness, hath won many a heart from a pretty flatterer. Age itself is not unamiable, while it is preserved clean and unsullied: like a piece of metal constantly kept smooth and bright, we look on it with more pleasure than on a new vessel that is cankered with rust.

7. I might observe further, that as cleanliness renders us agreeable to others, so it makes it easy to ourselves; that

it is an excellent preservative of health ; and that several vices, destructive both to mind and body, are inconsistent with the habit of it. But these reflections I shall leave to the leisure of my readers, and shall observe in the third place, that it bears a great analogy with purity of mind, and naturally inspires refined sentiments and passions.

8. We find, from experience, that through the prevalence of custom, the most vicious actions lose their horror, by being made familiar to us. On the contrary, those who live in the neighbourhood of good examples, fly from the first appearances of what is shocking. It fares with us much after the same manner as our ideas. Our senses, which are the inlets to all the images conveyed to the mind, can only transmit the impression of such things as usually surround them ; so that pure and unfulfilled thoughts are naturally suggested to the mind, by those objects that perpetually encompass us, when they are beautiful and elegant in their kind.

9. In the East, where the warmth of the climate makes cleanliness more immediately necessary than in colder countries, it is made one part of their religion : the Jewish law (and the Mahometan, which, in some things, copies after it) is filled with bathings, purifications, and other rites of the like nature. Though there is the above-named convenient reason to be assigned for these ceremonies, the chief intention, undoubtedly, was to typify inward purity and cleanliness of heart by those outward washings.

10. We read several injunctions of this kind in the book of Deuteronomy, which confirm this truth, and which are but ill accounted for by saying, as some do, that they were only instituted for convenience in the desert, which otherways could not have been habitable for so many years.

11. I shall conclude this essay with a story which I have somewhere read in an account of Mahometan superstition. A Dervise of great sanctity one morning had the misfortune as he took up a crystal cup, which was consecrated to the prophet, to let it fall upon the ground, and dash it in pieces. His son coming in some time after, he stretched out his hand to bless him, as his manner was every morning ; but the youth going out stumbled over the threshold and broke his arm. As the old man wondered at these events, a caravan passed by in its way from Mecca. The Dervise approached it to beg a blessing ; but as he stroked one of

the holy camels, he received a kick from the beast, that sorely bruised him. His sorrow and amazement increased upon him, till he recollected, that, through hurry and inadvertency, he had that morning come abroad without washing his hands.

\*\*\*\*\*

*Pride.*

1. **T**HERE is no passion which steals into the heart more imperceptibly, and covers itself under more disguises, than pride. For my own part, I think if there is any passion or vice which I am wholly a stranger to, it is this; though at the same time, perhaps this very judgment which I form of myself, proceeds, in some measure, from this corrupt principle.

2. I have been always wonderfully delighted with that sentence in holy writ, *Pride was not made for man*. There is not indeed any single view of human nature under its present condition, which is not sufficient to extinguish in us all the secret seeds of pride; and, on the contrary, to sink the soul into the lowest state of humility, and what the school-men call self-annihilation. Pride was not made for man, as he is,

1. A sinful,
2. An ignorant,
3. A miserable being.

There is nothing in his understanding, in his will, or in his present condition, that can tempt any considerate creature to pride or vanity.

3. These three very reasons why he should not be proud, are notwithstanding the reasons why he is so. Were not he a sinful creature, he would not be subject to a passion which rises from the depravity of his nature; were he not an ignorant creature, he would see that he has nothing to be proud of; and were not the whole species miserable, he would not have those wretched objects before his eyes, which are the occasions of this passion, and which make one man value himself more than another.

4. A wise man will be contented that his glory be deferred till such time as he shall be truly glorified; when his understanding shall be cleared, his will rectified, and his happiness assured; or in other words, when he shall be neither sinful, nor ignorant, nor miserable.

5. If there be any thing which makes human nature appear *ridiculous* to beings of superior faculties, it must be pride. They know so well the vanity of those imaginary perfections that swell the heart of man, and of those little supernumerary advantages, whether in birth, fortune, or title, which one man enjoys above another, that it must certainly very much astonish, if it does not very much divert them, when they see a mortal puffed up, and valuing himself above his neighbours on any of these accounts, at the same time that he is obnoxious to all the common calamities of the species.

6. To set this thought in its true light, we will fancy, if you please, that yonder mole-hill is inhabited by reasonable creatures, and that every pismire (his shape and way of life only excepted) is endowed with human passions. How should we smile to hear one give us an account of the pedigrees, distinctions, and titles that reign among them!

7. Observe how the whole swarm divide and make way for the pismire that passes through them! You must understand he is an emmet of quality, and has better blood in his veins than any pismire in the mole-hill.—Don't you see how sensible he is of it, how slow he marches forward, how the whole rabble of ants keep their distance?

8. Here you may observe one placed upon a little eminence, and looking down on a long row of labourers. He is the richest insect on this side the hillock, he has a walk of half a yard in length, and a quarter of an inch in breadth, he keeps a hundred menial servants, and has at least fifteen barley-corns in his granary. He is now chiding, and belaving the emmet that stands before him, and who, for all that we can discover, is as good an emmet as himself.

9. But here comes an insect of figure! don't you take notice of a little white straw that he carries in his mouth? That straw, you must understand, he would not part with for the longest tract about the mole-hill: did you but know what he has undergone to purchase it! see how the ants of all qualities and conditions swarm about him! Should this straw drop out of his mouth, you would see all this numerous circle of attendants follow the next that took it up, and leave the discarded insect, or run over his back to come at his successor.

10. If now you have a mind to see all the ladies of the mole-hill, observe first the pismire that listens to the emmet



on her left hand, at the same time that she seems to turn away her head from him. He tells this poor insect that she is a goddess, that her eyes are brighter than the sun, that life and death are at her disposal. She believes him, and gives herself a thousand little airs upon it.

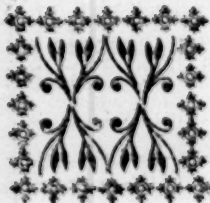
11. Mark the vanity of the pismire on your left-hand. She can scarce crawl with age ; but you must know she values herself upon birth ; and if you mind, spurns at every one that comes within her reach. The little nimble coquette that is running along by the side of her, is a wit. She has broke many a pismire's heart. Do but observe what a drove of lovers are running after her.

12. We will here finish this imaginaty scene ; but first of all to draw the parallel closer, will suppose, if you please, that death comes down upon the mole-hill, in the shape of a cock-sparrow, who picks up without distinction, the pismire of quality and his flatterers, the pismire of substance and his day labourers, the white draw officer and his sycophants, with all the goddesses, wits, and beauties of the mole-hill.

13. May we not imagine that beings of superior natures and perfections regard all the instances of pride and vanity, among our own species, in the same kind of view, when they take a survey of those who inhabit the earth ; or, in the language of an ingenious French poet, of those pismires that people this heap of dirt, which human vanity has divided into climates and regions.

GUARDIAN, Vol. II. No. 153.

F I N I S.



rra  
the  
hat  
nd

nd.  
va-  
ery  
co-  
vit.  
hat

of  
se,  
of a  
hire  
his  
nts,

.  
res  
ity,  
hen  
in  
ires  
vi-

.